

# Teaching The Cold- Hearted Luhan to fall in Love

By koreangirl26

## CHAPTER 1

“Aigoo! I’m so bored.” you groaned as you laid on your bed. “Yeah! I hate staying at this dorm.” Seohyun added, one of your roommates which is also lying on her bed across your bed.

Yoona sighed in boredom, another roommate of yours who was sitting at the edge of your bed. Yuri tapped her chin, thinking. “hmm.. Why don’t we play then?” she suggested.

You sat up, “Play? What should we play?” you asked. “I don’t know. What do you girls want us to play?” Yuri asked.

Seohyun sat up from her bed, “Truth or dare.” she beamed. All you 3 turned to her. Seohyun smiled, “Let’s play truth or dare.” she suggested.

“Instead of truth or dare, why should we play a dare game only?” Yoona snapped. “What do you mean by ‘dare game only?’” you asked.

“It’s like a truth or dare game but in this type of game, you don’t have a choice but to say ‘dare’.” Yoona explained.

“Seem interesting! I wanna play!” Yuri beamed. “Nado! Nado!” Seohyun joined.

Now, you’re the only one who didn’t join. They turned to you, waiting for you to agree.

You let out a sigh, “Do I have a choice?” you said. They smiled, “Good! Come on, let’s spin the bottle.” Yuri said.

“Do we still have to do that? We’re just 4 here and I guess each of us will definitely get a dare right?” you snapped.

“Oh yeah! You’re right! But wait!” Yoona snapped as she stood up and get a piece of paper and pen then went back to her place.

You raised an eyebrow, “What’s that?” you asked. Yoona cut the paper into 4 parts then give it to all of you one by one, “Write 1 dare there and we’ll use it afterwards.” she said.

All the 3 of you obeyed her and started writing a dare.

“Done?” Yoona asked after she finished hers. You, Seohyun and Yuri nodded as the 3 of you folded the papers and give it back to Yoona.

“Ready?” Yoona asked. You all nodded, getting ready. With that, Yoona throw the papers like confetti as all of you get one of it.

“Don’t open yet.” Yoona snapped. “So.. if you don’t successfully perform your dare,

you need to wear a bikini and run around the school. That’s the punishment! Are you girls okay with it?” Yoona asked.

Yuri and Seohyun slowly nodded. “Sooyoung?” Yoona asked you. You nervously bit your bottom lip before nodding.

“Okay! So.. Let’s start with you, Seohyun.” Yoona said. Seohyun took a deep breath and slowly open her paper. “Mwo?! Pass every single math exams?!” she gasped. All of you burst into laughter.

“Seems like you need to study hard Seohyun-ah..” Yuri teased. Seohyun pouted, “Aish! In all the subjects, why math? I hate this subject so much!!” she cursed.

“You’re the one who write that, don’t you?” Yoona asked you. You playfully smiled, “Of course! All of you hate that subject so if anyone of you get that dare will definitely hate this game. And since Seohyun get it, well.. good luck!” you said.

Seohyun pouted, “Aish! I must start study tonight.” she said and sighed. “So, who’s next?” Yuri asked. “Since you already ask that, why don’t you open your paper next?” You snapped as Yoona nodded in agreement.

Yuri pouted as she slowly open her paper. “What the?! Get a nerd boyfriend and date him until the end of semester?!” she gasped in disbelief.

You chuckled, “Woah! That dare suit you. You need to stop dating handsome boys now..” you said.

Yuri pouted, “Who write this?”

she asked. "Mian Yuri-ah but I did." Yoona apologized. Yuri sighed, "Aigoo! This dare will give me insane!" she cursed.

"Now, my turn." Yoona said as she slowly open her paper. She paused and raised an eyebrow, "You're not allowed to fall in love." she whispered.

"Wait! What?! You did that Seohyun, don't you?" Yuri hissed. Seohyun nodded, "Mian. I can't think of any dare so that's what I did." she apologized. "Luckily, I got it! So easy!" Yoona said with a smile.

"Who knows? Maybe you fall for someone this semester?" you snapped. Yuri nodded in agreement. "That's impossible! You know I don't have time for a relationship." she said. "If you say so." you said.

"Now, open yours." Seohyun snapped you. "Uh-oh.." you nodded as you slowly open your paper.

Your eyes widen, "Teaching the cold-hearted Luhan to fall in love?" you slowly said. Yuri smiled, "I'm the one who write that!" she proudly said.

"Luhan?" you gasped. Yoona frowned, "You don't know him?" she asked.

"I do but.. why him? I don't think I can still change his cold heart into warm one." you explained.

"That was it called a dare. You need to make a miracle to turn the impossible thing into possible one." Yuri snapped.

"But I didn't know more about

him." you said. Yuri shrugged, "Then I'll help you about that.

## CHAPTER 2

"Kyaaaaaaaaa!!!" a loud squeal can be heard from the girls inside the canteen as you was eating together with your 3 friends.

"Omo! They're coming! EXO is coming!" "Oh shit! They are freaking hot!" "Cool at the same time." you heard some girls said.

\*EXO?\* you thought and with a frown, you looked up. 12 handsome guys were coming.

As your eyes busy staring at EXO, you felt a hand tugged on your uniform. You turned to your side and saw Yuri. You raised an eyebrow.

"Look! EXO is here." she whispered. "Yeah, I know. I have eyes." you simply replied.

Yuri rolled her eyes, "I know you have eyes. What I mean is, you're not familiar to them yet, are you?" she snapped. You shook your head, "No."

"Exactly! I'll introduce them to you. EXO is divided into two groups. One is EXO-K and the other one is EXO-M. K and M live in separate dorms but next to each other though.." Yuri started. "K and M? What's the meaning of that letters?" you asked, confused. "Good question! So, K means Korean while M means Mandarin." she replied.

"So?" you raised an eyebrow. Yuri rolled her eyes once again, "FYI, they used to perform a dance along with singing in this school whenever there's a program. K used to sing korean songs while M translate it to mandarin." she explained.

"They used to perform here in school? How come I didn't know about that?" you wondered. "Yeah, it's because your busy talking with your books." Yuri snapped.

You looked at her and frowned, "I bet I'm not the only one who didn't saw them performed." you stated as you glance at Seohyun.

"Well.. I actually saw them performed many times." Seohyun trailed off. "See? Even Seohyun saw them." Yuri snapped.

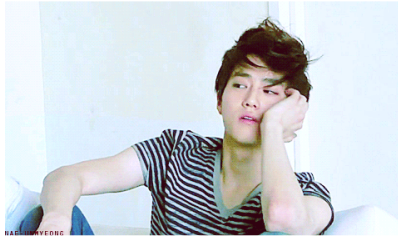
You rolled your eyes then glanced at Yoona, waiting for her answer. "Umm.. Honestly, I already saw K performed but didn't saw M yet." she muttered. "Well at least she does saw them." Yuri said before you could say a word.

You made a face, "Whatever!"

"Now, let's continue. As what I have said earlier, EXO was divided into two groups. K and M. Both groups have equal number of members, both have 6. Let me introduce the members belongs to K." she started.

"Look at the guy who resembles with Super Junior's Choi Siwon?" Yuri asked. You looked at EXO and found the

guy who exactly looks like Siwon of SuJu.



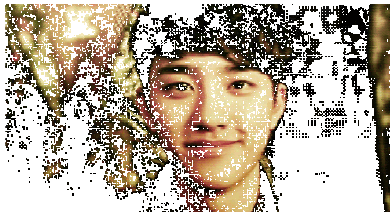
“His name is Suho. Leader of K. He is really caring to his members and he shares room with the maknae Sehun.” Yuri said. You nodded even you didn’t know who Sehun is.

“Then, the next guy beside him...” Yuri motioned. You followed her gaze and saw the guy with a creepy smile next to Suho.



“Chanyeol is his name. He’s the rapper of the group K. He’s the happy virus. If you get close to him, you will surely laugh because of him. He shares room with Baekhyun.” Yuri introduced. “Yeah, I see that on his face.” you commented.

Yuri chuckled, “Now, look at the other side of Suho.” she motioned. You did.



“He is D.O.” Yuri started. “D.O.?” you snapped. “Let me

finish first.” Yuri said. “Uh-oh.. Go on.” you gestured her to continue.

“D.O. isn’t his real name but he used to be call by that name. His real name is Do Kyungsoo. Well, some of them not used to call by their real name. So, D.O. is good in cooking and shares room with Kai.” Yuri finished introducing D.O.

“Now, look at the guy next to Chanyeol. The guy wearing an eyeliner.” she gestured as you did.



“He is Baekyun. Also called ‘Bacon’. The vocalist of K along with D.O. He is close with his roommate Chanyeol.” Yuri said. “Wait! Why is he wearing an eyeliner?” you suddenly asked.

“Oh! That was his trademark!” Yuri replied. You just nodded in understanding. “Let’s go to the next one. The hot guy sitting next to D.O.” Yuri motioned.



“He is Kai. The famous member of EXO. He is the dancing machine. He’s freaking hot, isn’t he? He usually showed his body to everyone and I love it.” Yuri

said, giggling. You rolled your eyes and shook your head because of your friend’s reaction.

“And the last member is sitting on the last line.” Yuri said.



“Sehun is his name. He’s close to Luhan the most. I don’t know how he got close to him behind his cold attitude. Well, who knows? So, he’s the maknae of K and he’s also good in dancing.” Yuri said.

“So, he was close to him huh?” you mumbled referring to Luhan. Yuri didn’t seem to hear it as she continued, “Now, let’s move to M. 4 of them are Chinese and the 2 of them are Korean. Look at the the guy who resembles Infinite’s Sungyeol.” Yuri gestured. You did.



“Wu Fan but he used to be called by the named Kris. A Canadian-Chinese member. Leader of M. He knows lot of languages such as Mandarin, English, Korean and even Cantonese. He shares room with



Luhan.” Yuri said. “Woah! So smart.” you commented.

“Yeah! Just like you.” Yuri snapped. You shook your head, “No, I’m not smart as him.” you defended. Yuri rolled her eyes, “If you say so..”

You pouted, “Just continue, okay..” you said. “Araseo..” Yuri nodded, “The next one is the guy with chubby face.” she motioned as you followed her gaze.



“So cute.” Yuri giggled. You rolled your eyes. “Continue.” you snapped. “Okay, okay. His name is Xiumin. Not his real name though. His co-members used to call him Baozi.” Yuri said.

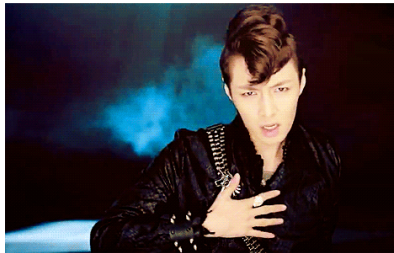
“Little bun?” you raised an eyebrow. Yuri nodded, “It’s because of his chubby face. A Korean member. He’s the funniest member of EXO. He shares room with Tao.” she said. “He’s Korean? Why is he belongs to M instead of K?” you asked.

“Because they need to divide themselves equally and he’s fit to be in M because he already knows some mandarin, I guess.” Yuri explained. You nodded and remained silent to let her introduced continuously. “The next one is the guy next to him.” Yuri said.



“Use to be called by the named Chen. A Korean also. I think he belongs to M because of his voice. He’s voice is actually powerful. Also know some mandarin. He shares room with Lay.” Yuri said as you nodded along.

“To the next one. The guy with unicorn hair.” she motioned.



“Lay is his name. A Chinese. The dancing machine next to Kai. He also loves to play guitars. He’s quiet to the people he’s not close with but they said that he’s talkative around his co-members.” she explained. “Next is the guy with scary eyes.”

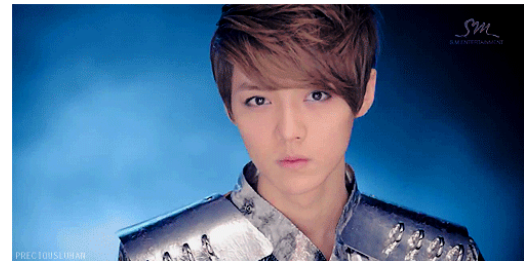


“He is Tao. A Chinese also. The maknae of M. He may seem scary by his looks but believe it or not, he’s the crying baby among all of them.” Yuri muttered. “I don’t believe you.”

you said.

“Don’t believe then.” Yuri rolled her eyes as she continued, “Now, let’s talk about your target. Last but not the least, Luhan.” she said looking at his direction.

You followed her gaze and saw a guy sitting next to the guy being called Sehun.



“Aww! What an angelic face he has.” Yuri said but sighed, “Poor thing, he doesn’t have a heart. He didn’t know what love is. The cold-hearted member of EXO. A Chinese. As you can see, he’s close with Sehun. Good in dancing, singing and perfectly handsome.” Yuri said.

“Wait! How did you know all about this?” you suddenly snapped. “Because I’m their fan.” Yuri winked.

You rolled your eyes, “More like a stalker.” you muttered as Yuri pouted.

\*However, he still a cold-hearted person.\* you thought as your gaze landed at Luhan once again.

“Sooyoung-ah!” you felt someone poked you. It was Yuri. “Did you see the small words that I write on your dare paper?” she asked.

You frowned, “Small words?” you asked, confused. Yuri rolled

her eyes, “Aish! How could you missed that?!” she hissed.

“Don’t worry. I still have the paper.” Seohyun snapped. “You did?” Yoona asked. Seohyun nodded as she handed the paper to you.

You unfolded the paper and read the small words below the dare. “You can’t fall in love with your target, Luhan.” Yuri read it for you.

You chuckled, “Of course I won’t!” you said with full of confidence. “Who knows? Maybe you accidentally fall for him while performing your dare?” Yoona snapped.

“Wait! That’s the same on what I said to you yesterday.” you snapped back. “Exactly what I wanted to pointed out! Nobody knows on what will going to happen.” she muttered.

You shrugged, “Believe me. I won’t fall for him, NEVER.”

## CHAPTER 3

At night, you were sitting on your bed while hugging your legs across your chest. You were staring at your bed sheet, deeply in thought.

Seohyun, your roommate curiously watched you. She frowned as she sat on your bed but it seems like you didn’t notice it.

Confused, Seohyun followed your gaze as she ended up looking at your bed sheet too.

She turned to you again and raised an eyebrow, “Yah! What happen to you?” she asked.

Seems like you’re not focusing to her and didn’t looked up, eyes still glued to your bed sheet.

“Yah! Are you listening to me?” Seohyun irritated poked your arm that made you looked at her. “Oh.. Seohyun-ah.. Wae?” you innocently asked.

Seohyun rolled her eyes, “What happen to you? You’re just staring at your bed sheet. What exactly you’re thinking?” she asked.

You flatted your back to the cold wall as you let out a heaved sigh, “Eottokhae?” you asked. “Wae? Did something bad happen?” Seohyun asked worriedly.

You shook your head, “Not yet but there will be soon, for sure.” you replied. You saw her raised an eyebrow, “What do you mean?” she asked in confusion.

“About my dare...” you started. “Right! I need to study now!” Seohyun said as she quickly jumped off of your bed and went to her study table.

You get off from your bed and followed her, “Seohyun-ah, can you help me with my dare?” you asked. “Mian Sooyoung-ah. I need to study now.” she replied without looking at you, eyes were glued to her math book.

You pouted and slowly left the room. You decided to ask for Yoona’s help.

*Knock! Knock!*

You started to knock the door.

“Come in.” you heard Yuri’s voice said. You slowly open the door and entered the room.

“Oh! Sooyoung-ah.. What are you doing here? It’s already late.” Yoona said. “Uh-oh..” you sat beside her and held her hands, “Can you please help me?” you pleaded.

“What kind of help?” she asked. “About my dare.. Please..” you pleaded once more.

Yoona immediately removed her hands from yours. “Mian Sooyoung-ah but I can’t help you.” she apologized.

“Uh-oh..” you lowered your head before raising it again to meet Yuri’s eyes. You blinked at her a couple of times with an amused smile. Yuri simply shook her head as she lay on her bed.

She yawned, “I’m so sleepy.. We still have school tomorrow. No one can help you here Sooyoung.” she replied before closing her eyes.

“Uh-oh..” you sadly lowered your head as Yoona mouthed at you, ‘Mian..’

You shook your head and fake a smile. “I’ll go to sleep now. Jalja..” with that, you left their room and decided to take a walk outside the dorm.

As you were walking around the campus, you suddenly heard voices. You walked closer to see where it came from. Just when you stopped at one of the huge room, 12 guys popped on your sight.

You immediately hide yourself, not wanting to get caught. You

decided to leave just when you heard the word 'love' coming from them.

"Luhan hyung, did you ever experience to fall in love?" Sehun asked. "Yah maknae, did you know who are you asking?" Suho snapped.

"Wae? Is there a problem if I ask hyung about that?" Sehun innocently asked.

"Of course! He doesn't know the meaning of love then you're asking him if he ever experience that? You must be kidding!" Kris snapped.

Sehun looked at Luhan, "Who knows? Maybe Luhan hyung already experience it behind his attitude. Am I right hyung?" he asked.

Luhan paused, "Umm.. Kris is right! Plus, I don't need the 'love' that everyone is wanted to feel. Love is just like a pain for me." he firmly replied.

You gulped after hearing Luhan's cold replied. \*Jerk! How could I teach that kind of person to fall in love?\*

"Aww! You know what hyung? You need to experience it. When you're in love, it feels like you were in heaven." you heard Sehun said.

Luhan shrugged, "I'm looks like an angel so I think I'm already in heaven." he snapped.

You rolled your eyes because of his statement, \*Such a babo!\*

"If you say so. But I suggest you to at least give yourself a chance to fall in love." Baekhyun said.

Luhan rolled his eyes, "I don't want to talk about this kind of stuff. I'm already tired with our practice. I want to sleep now. Can we just go back to our dorm now?" he irritated said. "Yeah! I want to sleep too.." Lay agreed as the others nodded.

You started to panic at your spot when you heard that they were going out. You quickly search a place to hide and saw a wall. You immediately went there and hide yourself.

You let out a silent sigh, \*Thanks God! I'm almost caught!\*

Just then, you heard a sudden voice blurted out, "What are you doing here?"

## CHAPTER 4

"What are you doing here?" you heard a voice said. You immediately turned to your side and saw Seohyun standing there.

"Wait! Did you hear that?" you suddenly heard Chen asked. With that, you quickly covered Seohyun's mouth and pulled her closer to you.

Seohyun shrugged but you held her tightly, not wanting to cause any noise.

"Yah! I'm already tired okay. Let's just sleep now, shall we?" Luhan irritated snapped. "He's right. I want to sleep now." Lay agreed.

"Uh-oh.." Chen nodded and with that, EXO completely left.

When you realized that they were not around anymore, you heaved a sigh and finally let Seohyun free from your grip.

Seohyun panted before giving you a glare, "Yah! Why did you do that?" she asked in annoyed tone.

You rolled your eyes, "Can't you see? I'm hiding over here and you know what? You almost let us caught." you said.

"Psh! Wait! What are you doing here anyways? Why are you hiding from EXO?" Seohyun snapped.

"Uh-oh.. I was just walking because of thinking for my plan then I accidentally end up here and saw them. Wait! Wait! Why am I explaining this to you in the first place? So.. How about you? What are you doing here?" you asked back.

"I'm already finished studying and I realized that you wasn't around so I went to Yoona's and Yuri's room but you weren't there so I decided to look for you outside and now, I'm here, finally found you." she simply replied.

"Uh-oh.." you nodded in understanding. "Come on, I'm already tired. I want to take some beauty rest." Seohyun said as you nodded once more.

With that, both you and Seohyun went back to the dorm.

"So.. Did you already make a plan for your dare?" Seohyun suddenly asked. You paused before nodding, "Yes and thanks for not helping me coz I think my plan is perfect!" you said.

Seohyun rolled her eyes, “Aish! I also have a dare so I can’t help you. Anyways, do you mind sharing about your plan?” she asked.

You walked closer to her and whispered to her ear, “It’s a secret.” you smirked then entered the dorm.

Seohyun pouted, “Aish!” then she followed you entering the dorm and went straight to the room that she was sharing with you.

---

Morning fast came. You woke up early to prepare yourself for school. You found Yoona, Yuri and Seohyun already eating their breakfast.

You frowned, “Yah! Why didn’t you wake me up?” you pouted. They rolled their eyes on you, “As if we can disturb your sleeping habit. It’s better to hear hurtful things from than getting a kick from you.” Yuri said. “Nado.” Yoona and Seohyun agreed.

You pouted even more but walked to them and joined them for the breakfast. “By the way, Seohyun told us that you already have a plan for your dare? Is that true?” Yoona asked.

You simply nodded, “Yes but I won’t tell to all of you. It’s a secret.” you said and continued your food.

With one more pout, they also continued their food.

---

“Yah! Luhan wake up!” Kris

gently shook his body. “5 more minutes.” Luhan mumbled with his eyes closed.

“Aish! Wake up, will you? Come on, get up!” Kris shook him once more. “Let me sleep more.” Luhan mumbled once again.

“Yah! Luhan! Wake—” before Kris could finish his sentence, Luhan already kicked him off the bed.

“Urf!” Kris yelped in pain. Despite of the pain that he was feeling from his butt, he managed to get up and yelled, “Yah! LUHAN WAKE UP!!!” he said out loud that made the other members covered their ears.

“Gaahhh!! What was that?!” Luhan finally sat up, half awake with blank face. Kris rolled his eyes, “Just wake up, will you?! The breakfast is ready and we still have to attend school. Aish! I really hate your sleeping habit!” Kris cursed before leaving the room.

Luhan rubbed his eyes before he get off from the bed and followed Kris leaving the room.

---

*Kriiiiiiiiiing! Kriiiiiiiiiing!*

The bell suddenly rang. Means, the school will start now.

“Come on Sooyoung-ah before we get late!” Yoona said since she was your classmate on your first subject. “You go first.” you said. “How about you? Aren’t you going to attend our class too?” she asked.

“I will. It’s just that... Umm.. I

need to use the restroom.” you replied. Yoona nodded in understanding, “Okay, let’s see each other in the classroom then.” she then left.

As Yoona disappeared from your sight, you looked around to see if there are still people around.

When you finally sure that no one around, you slowly stepped backwards until you reach Luhan’s locker. Then you pulled out a folded paper from your pocket and carefully slide it to the small hole from his locker until it fully reach the inside part of the locker.

You looked around once more, checking if someone saw you. Luckily, there’s no one. You heaved a sigh before heading to your first class.

*First move: check!*

---

*Kriiiiiiiiiing! Kriiiiiiiiiing!*

The bell rang again but this time, for lunch.

As EXO went out from their class, they straightly went to their lockers to put back their books.

Just when Luhan opened his locker, a folded paper suddenly fall down. He frowned in confusion as he reached out the paper to take a look at it.

*to: Luhan*

*Do you ever experience to fall in love with someone? I guess it’s a no, am I right? Well, I’m willing to teach you..*



*from: 'Love' tutor*

## CHAPTER 5

*to: Luhan*

*Do you ever experience to fall in love with someone? I guess it's a no, am I right? Well, I'm willing to teach you..*

*from: 'Love' tutor*

It's written on a small piece of paper. Luhan raised an eyebrow, \*'Love' tutor? What is this? A joke?\*

"Hyung, what's that?" Sehun suddenly approach him and tried to take a peek on the paper but Luhan folded it again and immediately placed it on his pocket.

Luhan shrugged, "Nothing important." he replied. "You sure?" Sehun asked. Luhan nodded, "Come on, let's go eat." he said.

With that, EXO headed to the canteen.

---

Yoona, Yuri and Seohyun were waiting for you outside your classroom until you finally went out.

"Sooyoung-ah!" Seohyun called. You looked up and smiled as you saw your friends.

"What take you so long?" Yoona asked. "Uh-oh..

Seonsaengnim took overtime so.." you replied.

They nodded in understanding, "Come on, I'm already hungry~" Yuri whined. You, Seohyun and Yoona nodded in agreement.

You and your friends went to the canteen and went to the usual place. Right after you 3 got your orders, EXO suddenly came. As always, the other girls make squealed as Yuri joined along and Seohyun's eyes were glued to them also.

You rolled your eyes to your two friends as Yoona seems not interested and started her food.

You was about to start your food too when a small thing on Luhan's hand caught your eyes. It was your letter that you leave on his locker.

\*He got it! Glad he didn't throw it or something..\* you thought, relieved.

"Yah! Sooyoung-ah, aren't you going to start your food now?" Yuri snapped that made looked at her. Then you realized that she was also started her food and so did Seohyun.

"Uh-oh.. Yeah." you replied and started your food. After one bite, you took a glance at Luhan's direction once more. He was staring at the paper like he was studying it.

Yuri noticed you and followed your gaze. "Quit staring." she snapped. You turned to her, "Eh?"

"Wait a minute, did you already make a move about your dare?" Yuri asked. You shrugged,

"Yes, I did." you replied.

Yuri looked at you with wide eyes and so were Yoona and Seohyun. "You already did? When? Where?" Seohyun asked continuously.

You simply nodded. "So.. You already have a talk with him?" Yoona asked. Yuri and Seohyun didn't take their eyes off from you, curious.

You took another bite on your food and paused before answering, "Who said that I need to talk to him to perform the dare?" you said and took one more bite.

"Mwo? You didn't talk to him yet but you already make a move? Wait! I'm confused." Yuri stated.

"Let's just say it's a hidden plan. I think my idea is perfect." you stated proudly.

"Whatever your plan is, I hope you'll make it without being caught." Yuri said. You paused, "You know me, I can handle whatever it is." you said with full of yourself.

"If you say so.."

---

Meanwhile, Luhan's eyes were still glued on the paper that he was holding.

He read it once more. With a frown, he made a think of it. \*I wonder who gave this to me and how did he or she know that I haven't experience falling in love yet?\* more thoughts keep coming on his mind because of that piece of paper.



“Yah! Luhan, aren’t you going to eat? You’ve been staring at that paper since we arrived here.” Kris snapped.

“If you don’t want to eat your food, I can take care of it you know..” Xiumin suggested. Kris mocked on his head. “Ow!” Xiumin winced as he pouted.

Kris rolled his eyes and turned back to Luhan, “What is that by the way?” he asked.

Luhan immediately hide the paper on his pocket again and shrugged, “It’s nothing.” he assured.

Sehun stared at him in confusion. Luhan shook his head, assuring him that it was really nothing. Satisfied, Sehun nodded in understanding.

Luhan took one last glance on his pocket before started eating his food.

## CHAPTER 6

At night, you decided to make another letter for your plan. You pulled out a small piece of paper and a pen.

While you were sitting on your bed, you started writing on the paper.

Meanwhile, Seohyun was busy solving some math problems on her book. Minutes later, she started having a hard time with the problems. She decided to ask for a help from you as she stood up and walked towards you.

“Sooyoung-ah, can you help me with this?” she asked as she bounced on your bed that made you startled.

You quickly hide the paper on your chest and looked at Seohyun in surprise, “Yah! I almost got a heart attack, you know that?!” you hissed.

Seohyun stared at you blankly, “But I was just asking. I didn’t mean to startle you.” she pouted.

You let out a sigh, “So what do you want?” you asked without looking at her as you continued writing.

“Umm.. This math problem is killing me so I was just hoping that you could help me?” she slowly asked.

“Mian but I’m busy right now.” you replied, not even look at her. Seohyun gaze at you were doing. Curious, she lean closer wanting to see what you were doing.

“What’s that?” she asked. Before she could see what you write on the paper, you immediately hide it on your back. “Yah! I’m busy right and I already told you that I can’t help you. You must study now and please don’t disturb me.” you snapped.

She pouted, “Aish! Araseo, araseo..” with another pout, Seohyun went back to her study table and tried to solve the math problems.

Minutes later, Seohyun went back to you. “Sooyoung-ah, are you still busy?” she suddenly blurted out.

Shocked, you dropped the paper

as it landed on your bed. Seohyun was about to get it but you quickly grabbed it first.

Seohyun look at you, confused. “Yah! What happen to you?” she asked worriedly. “Uh-oh.. Nothing. Why are you here again anyways?” you asked.

“Umm.. I just want to ask if you’re still busy on what you were doing?” she asked. “Wae? You still need my help?” you asked back.

Seohyun shook her head, “Ani. I just want to ask your permission if I can turn off the lights now?”

You nodded, “Uh-oh.. Ne. I’m already finished anyways.” you replied. “Okay then.” she stood up as she walked to turn off the lights.

“Goodnight Sooyoung-ah..” and then the room went black. “Goodnight.” you replied as you placed the letter on your bag.

With that, you gently lay on your bed and drifted to sleep.

---

On the other hand, Luhan was busy staring at the paper that you gave to him through his locker.

He was already lying on his bed with couple of thoughts on his head. \*‘Love’ tutor.. Who exactly are you? How did you know that I’ve never experience to fall in love?\*

He let out a heavy sigh, \*...and why do you want to help me? How can you help me if I didn’t know who you are?\*

there are lots of questions on his mind that still hasn’t an answers yet.

He groaned, “Ahhhh... I’m confused!!” “Yah! If you don’t want to sleep, could you please lower your voice and let the others sleep.” Kris, he’s roommate snapped.

Luhan turned to him as he realized that he’s not the only person on the room. He rolled his eyes, “Whatever!”

Kris made a face and turned around, not wanting to see Luhan’s face. Annoyed, Kris pulled the blanket up to his head and tried to sleep.

Luhan stared at the paper one last time before placing it back to his drawer and drifted to sleep.

---

You woke up the next day when you felt the sun rays hit your face through the window.

Your eyes fluttered open as you slowly sat up. You stretched your arms upward with a yawn.

Off the bed, you prepared yourself for school and so did your friends. Ready, you and your friends left the dorm and headed to your respective classes.

For the second time, you excused yourself again to Yoona. Being understandable, Yoona walked first to the classroom.

As Yoona disappeared on your sight. You scanned the atmosphere before you put your second letter to Luhan’s locker.

Luckily, no one saw you. With that, you safely headed to your

first class.

---

Lunch fast came. As always, EXO headed to their lockers to put back their books.

Right after Luhan open his locker, another letter popped in front of him. \*Letter again?\* with a frown, Luhan reach it and carefully open it.

to: Luhan

*You’re confused, aren’t you? I can see it at your expression when you received my first letter. Now, I’ve made another letter. So, what are you thinking right now Luhan? I wanna guess! You’re thinking who I am, am I right? You don’t have to know, it’s not important anyways. I just want to help you..*

*Tip #1: Always give your smile to others or at least smile once in a day :)*

from: ‘Love’ tutor

## CHAPTER 7

to: Luhan

*You’re confused, aren’t you? I can see it in your expression when you received my first letter. Now, I made another letter. So, what are you thinking right now Luhan? I wanna guess! You’re thinking who I am, am I right? You don’t have to know, it’s not important anyways. I just want to help you..*

*Tip #1: Always give your smile to others or at least smile once in a day :)*

from: ‘Love’ tutor

With a frown, Luhan stared at the paper that he was holding.

Sehun poked him, “Hyung, what’s that?” he asked as he tried to take a peek on the paper but Luhan immediately put it on his pocket.

Luhan shrugged, “It’s nothing.” he replied. Sehun study his face, “Are you sure? You always got the same paper from your locker. Is that a love letter?” he asked.

The others heard it as they turned their attention to Luhan.

“You got a love letter? Woah! What a brave girl to give the cold-hearted Luhan a love letter.” Baekhyun commented, earning a glare from Luhan.

“Chill! I was just kidding.” Baekhyun immediately defended himself. “It’s not a love letter okay. Let’s just go, shall we?” Luhan snapped.

“What is that then?” Chen asked. “Nothing important.” was all Luhan replied before he walked off.

Confused, the others followed him and headed to canteen.

---

You, Seohyun, Yoona and Yuri were already eating lunch but you still couldn’t see any sight of EXO.

You let out heavy sigh before taking a bite on your food. Seohyun, Yoona and Yuri confusedly stared at you because of the sudden sigh.

Seems like you didn't noticed it and continued eating blankly. "Yah! Is there something bothering you?" Yuri asked.

You snapped out your blanked face and turned to them, "Eh?!"

"Looks like you're thinking something. Do you have any problems? You can share with us, you know." Yoona said.

"Uh-oh.." you shook your head, "Ani, I was just thinking some things. It's not important anyways so don't worry." you replied.

Just then, EXO finally arrived at the canteen. You lifted your head to their direction. Your friends followed your gaze and frowned.

"Yah! Since when did you become interested to them?" Seohyun snapped. You shrugged, "Who said I'm interested to them?"

"Then why are you looking at them with interest just now?" Seohyun asked. "I was just checking my target. Remember, I need to perform my dare successfully." you replied.

Yuri raised an eyebrow, "Do you think your dare will be successful if you just stare at Luhan from afar?" she snapped.

"Who knows?" you simply replied as your gaze landed on Luhan. You scanned his body but disappointedly, you couldn't find your letter from his hand.

\*Did he get it? Or he just throw it?\* your face fell and just continued your food.

Confused, your friends stared at you with a frown on their faces. Then they shook their heads because of your weird actions.

You took another glance at Luhan then you saw a surprised expression from his face.

---

Luhan was blankly staring on his food when Lay accidentally dropped his water on Luhan's food.

Lay stared at Luhan in horror and so did the others. Luhan clenched his fist and was about to scold Lay when he suddenly remembered the letter he received earlier.

*Tip #1: Always give your smile to others or at least smile once in a day :)*

Surprisingly, Luhan greeted his teeth and forced a smile. EXO jaws dropped by his sudden changed of expression.

"It's okay. Just get me another food." Luhan snapped. Lay slowly nodded and quickly get Luhan a new set of food.

On the other hand, you were smiling unknowingly after seeing the whole incident.

You then saw Luhan pulled out a piece of paper. It was the letter you send to him through his locker.

\*I knew it! He got it! I could see that my plan will going to

success!\* you beamed on your mind.

Still confused, your friends followed your gaze. Seohyun found a familiar paper on Luhan's hand before saying, "Wait! That paper is familiar to me."

You gulped, \*Omo!\* Seohyun turned to you, "That paper, that's yours. Am I right?" she asked. You cleared your throat, "Yes, that's mine. It's part of my plan, okay." you simply replied.

"Plan? For your dare?" Yoona asked. You simply nodded. "How did you send it to him without being caught?" Yuri asked.

You paused and lean closer to them as they lean back, waiting for what you're going to say.

"It's a secret." you smirked and lean back to your seat. They pouted because of your reply.

You glance back to Luhan who was busy staring on your letter. \*This dare is interesting, I guess.\* you thought.

---

Next day, you and your friends went to school. Ready to put your new letter to Luhan's locker, you motioned Yoona to walk first on the classroom.

Since Yoona knew about your plan, she let you do it by yourself.

With that, you carefully put it to Luhan's locker before heading to your first class.

At lunch, EXO went to their

locker as they usually doing.

As Luhan's expected, there it is, another letter greeted him as he open his locker.

*to: Luhan*

*Another letter for you again, Luhan. I saw you smile for the first time yesterday. I'm glad you did the tip #1. Now, here's the 2nd tip.*

*Tip #2: Talk to others calmly without frowning.*

*from: 'Love' tutor*

## CHAPTER 8

*to: Luhan*

*Another letter for you again, Luhan. I saw you smile for the first time yesterday. I'm glad you did the tip #1. Now, here's the 2nd tip.*

*Tip #2: Talk to others calmly without frowning.*

*from: 'Love' tutor*

After Luhan read your 3rd letter, he quickly put it on his pocket not wanting Sehun to notice. To his luck, no one notice the letter that you gave to him.

"Hyung, kaja!" Sehun suddenly approach him. Luhan nodded then headed to the canteen with EXO members.

---

"Where's Yoona?" Yuri asked

as she, you and Seohyun waiting outside her classroom.

"Molla." Seohyun replied, shaking her head. Just then, your phone suddenly vibrated. "Oh! Yoona texted!" you said as you open the message.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Mian, Seonsaengnim took over time. Just go without me, I'll just go to the canteen by myself. Please tell about this to Yuri and Seohyun. Thanks!*

*from: Yoona*

"She said let's go first because her teacher took over time." you said. Yuri and Seohyun nodded in understanding and with that, the 3 of you headed to the canteen.

Right after the 3 of you arrived at the canteen, EXO followed. The one who look for is Luhan as usual. You didn't see any paper on his hand.

With a sigh, you lowered your head in disappointment. "What's with that sigh?" Yuri suddenly snapped.

You shook your head, "Nothing. I was just hungry but we still need to wait for Yoona." you lied.

"Liar!" Yuri said. You lifted your head and face her, "Mwo?!" you gasped.

"It's about your target, isn't it?" she smirked. You let out another sight, "I think I'm going to lose this game." you whispered.

"Get ready to wear a bikini and run around the school then."

Seohyun snapped. You immediately shook your head, "Ani! I won't give up! I can do this!" you snapped back.

"Good luck!"

---

"Aren't we going to order now?" Luhan asked impatiently. "Since you already mentioned about that, why don't you go and order for our food then?" Kris snapped.

Luhan raised an eyebrow as he moved forward trying to curse Kris but stopped. He clenched his fist and face-palmed himself.

"Okay then. I'll go order for our food." Luhan said as he stood up. EXO members looked at him in surprise.

"I'll go with you, hyung." Sehun said and stood up. "Nado." Kai said and with that, the 3 left to order food.

---

"Oh! Look! Yoona is coming!" you beamed as you saw the sight of Yoona. Yuri and Seohyun followed your gaze and saw Yoona coming towards your table.

Unexpectedly, Yoona suddenly bumped to someone. Your smile faded when you realized that she bumped to Luhan that made Yoona fall on the floor.

The students started gossiping on how unlucky Yoona is by bumping to the cold-hearted Luhan.

You bit your lower lip in horror. \*Omo! She bumped to a wrong person..\* you worriedly thought.



Then you saw Luhan fixed his clothes. Meanwhile, Kai help Yoona to stand up. "Are you okay?" Kai asked her.

Yoona nodded before facing Luhan. She bit her lower lip as she stared at Luhan in horror. Luhan was glaring at her.

Yoona bowed, "Mian, I didn't mean to—" her sentence was cut off when Luhan spoke, "It's okay. Next time, watch your steps." he calmly said.

Yoona stared at him with wide eyes. Luhan then left as Sehun followed. "Are you sure you're okay?" Kai asked Yoona for the second time.

Yoona nodded and bowed, "Ne, mianhe for the trouble." Kai just give her a nod. Satisfied, Kai finally followed Luhan and Sehun. Yoona then headed to your table.

"Did you see that? Luhan didn't curse her or something." "Yeah! I saw it with my own eyes. I can't believe it." "I know right?!" you heard the girls at your back said.

You smirked, \*Good Luhan! You did the 2nd tip that I gave to you.\* you thought. Just then, Yoona finally reach the table and sat next to you.

"Gwenchana?" Seohyun asked. Yoona nodded as she put her hand to her chest, "I almost die because of his stare. I thought he's going to bit me or something but he didn't." she replied.

You smiled and shook your head, "Of course he won't!" you snapped. Your friends turned to

you in confusion.

"What do you mean?" Yuri asked. "Simple answer for that question, that's part of my plan." you replied.

"Tell us, what exactly you did write on your letters?" Yuri asked. "As I told yesterday, my plan is a secret and I won't tell it to everyone even to the 3 of you." you said.

They rolled their eyes, "Whatever! Let's just order." Yuri said. "Yeah! Let's just order. I'm hungry." Seohyun agreed. With that, all of you order for food.

---

The next day, all tge members of EXO headed to their class all together. Just when they were walking half way, Luhan stopped.

"Wait! I forgot my math book. You guys go first." he said. The others nodded except Sehun.

"Want me to go with you, hyung?" Sehun asked. Luhan shook his head, "No need. I can go by myself." he replied. Sehun nodded in understanding.

With that, except Luhan, EXO headed to their classes as Luhan went back to his locker for his math book.

Meanwhile, you and your 3 friends went to your respective classes like the usual thing you always do. With a prepared paper, you told Yoona about you're going to do.

"Yoona, I can't go with you again and I think you already know why." you said. Yoona

nodded, "Okay." she then walked off but suddenly stopped and turned back to you.

"Sooyoung-ah!" she called. You looked up, "Ne?" "Be careful." she said.

You smiled and nodded, "Don't worry, I can handle this." you said. Satisfied, Yoona nodded then completely left.

You walked towards Luhan's locker. As you was standing in front of it, you motioned yourself on putting your letter inside the locker but stopped on your tracks when you heard a voice spoke.

"What do you think you're doing?" the voice said. You froze with wide eyes. You slowly spun around and saw the unexpected person right in front of you.

"Luhan.." you whispered. Luhan raised an eyebrow to you and was about to ask you again when he suddenly noticed a familiar paper that you was holding.

"So, you're the one who's sending those letters to me huh?" he blurted out. You gulped and held the paper tightly.

Luhan look around. Luckily, there's no students around. He then grabbed your wrist and dragged you away.

Your eyes widen in horror, \*Omo! God, please help me.. I don't want to die yet.\* you prayed on your head.

Just then, Luhan entered an empty room along with you. As both of you completely inside,

Luhan closed the door behind him and locked it.

You froze, \*I'm dead.\*

Luhan turned to you with cold stare. You gulped when he started to walk towards you. You stepped backwards until your back touch the cold wall.

Just in a minute, Luhan was already right in front of you. You bit your lower lip, \*This is really the end of my life. Goodbye omma, appa and my chingus. Goodbye my life..\*

You closed your eyes and just wait on what Luhan will going to do to you but surprisingly, you heard him said,

“Help me..”

## CHAPTER 9

“Help me..” Luhan said.

Your eyes popped open, “Mwo?!” you gasped in surprise. Luhan stepped backward and shrugged, “You heard me, I need your help.” he replied coolly.

You straightly looked at him and study his face, “You know, I don't think I'm the person to help—” before you could finish your words, Luhan looked at you with cold eyes.

You gulped in horror. “After

you started it, you're trying back out now huh?” he coldly said as he raised an eyebrow.

You remained silent, not knowing what to say. “Just help me how to fall in love, I'll pay you if that's what you want.” he simply stated.

“Honestly, I can't help you. Ask someone for help.” you said. “Tell me, how much do you want? 5,000 won every session? Is that enough or you still want higher than that?” he snapped.

You stared at him in disbelief, “Look, I'm not sending you those letters because I wanted to or get money from you. I have a reason—” for the second time, Luhan cut you off. “I don't care what your reason is, I just need your help.” he said coldly.

You gulped and remained silent once again. Luhan walked towards you with a cold expression. You bit your bottom lip, \*Aigoo! God, please don't let me die by his hands.\*

Without any thinking, you blurted out something that made him stopped. “Okay, I'll help you.” you said in quick pace.

Luhan stepped back and sat on a chair, “Good. So, how much every session?” he asked. You crossed your arms and looked at him, “I don't need any money from you. Every session is free. I'm not that kind of person as you think.” you replied.

“If you say so. Now, give me your phone.” he said as he motioned his hand in front of you. You raised an eyebrow, “Why would I?” you asked.

He harshly stood up that made

you jumped in surprised. He narrowed his eyes to you, giving you a hint. With that, you immediately pulled out your phone and handed it to him.

Luhan smirked and took your phone. He started dialing on your phone until you heard a phone's ringing. You saw him pulled out his phone from his pocket then reject the call and put back on his pocket.

Luhan turned to you as he handed your phone back, “Now, I have you number and you have my number. I'll call you when I need you.” he said as you took your phone.

“What if I'm busy when you call me?” you asked. “Cancel what you were doing then.” he simply replied.

You stared at him in disbelief, “Woah! Who do you think you are? My brother? My parents?” you snapped, not knowing what you had said.

Luhan give you a look, “Are you complaining now?” he asked in a cold tone.

You gaped and quickly shook your head, “Ani. I was just asking..” you muttered. He rolled his eyes, “Whatever!”

“Can I go now?” you asked, peeking on him. “I have something to say before you could go.” he snapped.

“What is it?” you asked calmly. “Since I think you know EXO right?” he asked a you nodded. “So.. about this 'love' tutoring, don't let everyone know about this especially my groupmates EXO.” he muttered.

“Even my friends?” you asked. He firmly nodded, “Even your friends.” he replied. \*But they already know about this. This dare is part of our game.\* you thought.

“You can go now.” he said, snapping out your thoughts. You looked up and nodded. You spun around and was about to leave when Luhan spoke again, “Wait!”

You stopped and looked back at him, “Yes?” you asked. “What’s your name?” he asked coolly. “Soyoung, Han Sooyoung.” you replied.

He nodded, “Okay, go now. You’re probably late on your first class now.” he snapped. Your eyes widen, remembering that you’re already talking to Luhan in such a long time.

With that, you rush outside the room and headed to your first class.

\*I hope I made a right decision.\* was all on your mind and so was Luhan.

With a sigh, Luhan exited the classroom and also headed to his first class since he’s already late like you.

---

“Ms. Han, detention after class.” you heard your teacher said as the time you entered your first classroom.

You face-palmed yourself, \*I knew it.\* you bowed, “Dae. Mian, I’m late.” you apologized. Your teacher gave you a nod and with that, you headed to your seat next to Yoona.

Yoona glance at you, “Why are you late? Did something bad happen?” she asked worriedly. You let out a heavy sigh, “It’s a long story. I’ll tell you later.” you replied before focusing on your teacher.

Yoona nodded in understanding the she also face the front to focus on the lesson.

Meanwhile, Luhan arrived at his first class, also late that made all his classmates looked at his direction.

“Please take your seat, Mr. Lu.” the teacher simply said.

All the students understand why the teacher didn’t scold him or even gave him detention. They all know that Lu’s family has big shares on their school so no one have guts to scold him or something.

Luhan then headed to his seat between Kris and Xiumin. Kris glanced at him, “What take you so long?” he asked.

Luhan shrugged, “Nothing important.” he replied, straightly facing the front.

Xiumin and Kris looked at each other in confusion but then face the front also, not wanting to ask Luhan anymore.

## CHAPTER 10

Lunch came. Your friends meet up with you in your classroom.

“Umm.. Mian but I can’t go with all of you today.” you said

to them. “Wae?” Seohyun asked.

“Uh-oh.. I can’t tell right now. But I’ll promise to join you girls at lunch in some other time.” you promised.

Yoona narrowed her eyes to you and she stepped towards you, “Tell us, did Luhan caught you in the morning?” she firmly asked.

You gulped, \*Aigoo! What should I say? Luhan told me to not to say about this to anyone.\* you paused.

“You’re late in our first class so maybe there’s something happen to you. Is about your dare, isn’t it?” Yoona muttered.

You let out a sigh and sat on the chair, “Yes, he caught me.” you whispered. “He did?” Yuri cooed. You nodded with a pout.

“Aish! I told you to be careful. Tsk! What did he said then?” Yoona asked. “He ask for my help.” you replied.

Seohyun sat next to you, “He asked for your help? For what?” she asked, excitedly.

“He wants me to help him to fall in love.” you said sadly. Yuri raised an eyebrow as she sat on the chair in front of you, “Why are you sad then? You should be happy now that your target is willing to do it.” she muttered.

Yoona sat next to Yuri, “But didn’t you girls wondering why he’s willing to fall in love?” she said.

“Yeah. What exactly I’m thinking.” you said. “Who knows? Maybe he does really

want to experience to fall in love.” Yuri snapped. “She’s right.” Seohyun agreed.

“Wait! Did you tell him that this is only a dare?” Yuri interrupted. You firmly shook your head, “Ani.”

“Good.” Yuri sighed in relief. “Now, what are you going to do?” she asked.

You shook your head, “Molla.” you let out a sigh, “I can’t teach him face to face. No, scratched that. I don’t like to teach him face to face.” you muttered.

“Wae?” Seohyun asked. “Because he’s a monster and a jerk.” you replied. Your 3 friends tilted their heads in confusion.

“If you tried to talk to him, his eyes were like he wants to kill you. Plus, he thought I was doing this because I want to get money from him. He’s totally a jerk!” you explained.

“Wow! He’s cool!” Yuri beamed as Seohyun nodded with a smile, agreeing with Yuri.

You shot them a look as Yoona simply shook her head, amused. “By the way, you girls only have half time for lunch. Don’t you want to eat now?” you snapped.

“Right! Come on, I’m hungry.” Yoona said. You shook your head, “I can’t go. I don’t want to see Luhan’s monster-jerk face!” you said.

“But you need to eat.” Seohyun snapped. “Don’t worry about me, I can handle this than seeing Luhan in my whole lunch time. Go now before the lunch time ended.” you motioned them to

go.

“Are you sure?” Yuri asked. You nodded with a smile, “Very sure.” you assured. Satisfied, the 3 left the classroom and made their way to the canteen as you decided to stay in the classroom for the whole lunch time.

---

EXO went straightly to the canteen after putting back their books on their lockers.

Right after EXO stepped inside the canteen, Luhan roamed his eyes around to check you if you were there but you weren’t. EXO headed to their place and ordered their usual food. Luhan pulled out his phone and started typing.

Meanwhile, your head was resting on your desk waiting for the lunch to be ended just when your phone vibrated.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Where are you? Why I didn’t saw here at the canteen?*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

The message says. You rolled your eyes on his message and decided to not give him a reply.

Back to Luhan, he was waiting for your reply in the whole 10 minutes but you didn’t reply. Luhan stared at his phone with a frown.

“Hyung, were you waiting for a text message from someone I know?” Sehun snapped his gaze. Luhan shook his head, “No, I’m not waiting for any text message.” he replied.

“Why aren’t you eating then?” Sehun asked. Luhan stared at Sehun for a while before shifting his gaze to his food.

“I don’t want to eat.” he replied. Sehun nodded in understanding as he continued eating while the others were also confused with Luhan’s action today but they just focus on their food instead if asking Luhan.

Luhan check his phone once more but there’s still no new message there. He held his phone tightly, \*Are you trying to escape now huh? Let’s see then. Be ready for our next meeting Han Sooyoung...\*

## CHAPTER 11

It was the end of school day means it’s time for your detention. You motioned your friends to go to the dorm first. Knowing that you got detention, they did leave first.

You went to the faculty room to meet up with your teacher. Then there she is, waiting for you.

You politely bowed as you entered the faculty room. Your teacher stared at you, “That was your first time to be late in my class. You’re a good scholar of this school so I think something happen earlier that made you late, am I right?” she asked.

You nodded. Your teacher smiled. \*Uh-oh.. Is she going to cancel my detention?\* you brightened on that thought.

“But,” she snapped then



continued, "I still give you detention to be fair to everyone." she finished her sentence.

Your face fell and just nodded, "Uh-oh.. Ne, I understand." you replied in a low voice. "Now, go to the gym and clean the whole area." your teacher commanded.

You forcedly nodded and bowed before leaving the faculty room. You straightly headed to the gym right after you stepped out the faculty room.

Right after you reach the gym, the first one you look for is a mop in using to clean the floor. Your eyes caught one of it from the corner. You walked towards it and grabbed it. Next thing you look for is a pail. As you found it, you get water using it then went back to the gym and started mopping the floor.

Hour later, you almost finish on mopping when someone kick the pail that made the water on it dropped on the floor.

Your eyes widen in horror. You looked up, "Yah! What do you think—" your sentence was cut off when you realized that the person who kicked the pail is no other than the monster-jerk, Luhan.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, "What was you're saying again?" he asked. You gulped as you took a stepped backward.

"Why didn't you reply to me earlier?" he asked once more. "Uh-oh.. I w-was b-busy that t-time.." you replied, shuttering.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, "Busy? Didn't I told you to answer my phone calls even

you're busy?" he muttered. "But it's not a phone call but a text message." you napped, not knowing what you had said.

Luhan narrowed his eyes to you. \*Uh-oh..\* "Oh.. I didn't mean that. What I mean is, sorry for not replying to you. But I'll promise to reply to you next time. Yeah.. That's what I mean.." you quickly snapped as you nervously laugh.

Luhan frowned at you. You stopped laughing as you back to serious face and cleared your throat, "What are you doing here anyways?" you asked.

"We're not close for me to ask with that question." he said. You rolled your eyes and made a face then continued mopping the floor.

Luhan stepped forward to you. Seeing his feet coming closer to you, you stopped on what you were doing and looked up.

Luhan pointed at you, "Don't ever try to escape from me coz you will just fail. Whenever you'll go, we'll still meet. Always remember that!" he warned as turned around and started to walk away.

You made a face and just continued mopping just when you heard your stomach growled. You face-palmed yourself as you touch your stomach in embarrassment.

Luhan stopped on his tracks and he turned around. He looked at you and smirked, "That's what you get on escaping from me in lunch time." he said.

You bit your lower lip, still embarrassed. Just then, you

heard another growl of stomach but it's not definitely belong to you.

You looked up and saw Luhan touching his tummy. You couldn't help but burst into laughter.

Luhan shot you a look, "Stop that!" he hissed but you didn't stop. "YAH! I SAID STOP!" now, Luhan shouted.

You finally stopped and cleared your throat. You continued mopping as silence filled the atmosphere. "So.. you didn't lunch also?.." you slowly asked.

He remained silence and decided to leave when you stopped him, "Wait!"

Luhan spun around to face you, with raising an eyebrow. "Umm.. Canteen is already closed in this hour. I'm planning to go outside the school and eat after I finish this. Do you want to go with me?" you carefully asked.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, "You know.. your stomach will hurts if you don't eat unless you have food on your dorm." you trailed off.

\*Unluckily, there's no food in our dorm today that's why I'm walking around and end up here.\* he thought but he didn't said it. "No." he simply replied and walked away without turning back.

You made a face, \*Monster-Jerk!\* then you continued mopping until you finished it just after some minutes. You then put back the mop and the pail to it's own position before leaving the gym.

Surprisingly, you saw Luhan outside. You frowned but ignored him since he told you that he rejected your offer.

As Luhan saw you, he ran after you and caught you up. Grabbing your arm, you spun around. You raised an eyebrow, "What?" you asked in an annoyed tone.

"I'll go with you." he simply said. "What?" you asked again, wanting to be sure if you heard him right.

Luhan rolled his eyes, "Let's just go before the school gate closes." he snapped and walked ahead of you. \*Still a jerk!\* with a pout, you followed.

---

"Come on, let go there!" you beamed as you pointed at the near Dukbokki Stand. Luhan raised an eyebrow to you, "Are you for real? You want me to eat at the street food?" he snapped.

You rolled your eyes, "Psh! The food there is good. Kaja!" you said and dragged him to the Dukbokki Stand.

\*Aish! This girl!\* Luhan wanted to escape but you already dragged him along with you.

"Ahjumma, 2 plates of dukbokki please.." you called as you found a place and sat there. Without a choice, Luhan sat across you.

Minutes later, the 2 plates of dukbokki were served. "Enjoy your meal." the ahjumma said then left. "Yay!" you happily beamed as you started your food.

Noticing that Luhan didn't eat

his food yet, you stopped and looked up. "Don't you want to eat? I can eat yours if you want." you said as you motioned your hand to his plate.

Luhan snapped your hand away, "Watch you were doing. Don't steal a food that doesn't belong to you. You have your own, just eat yours and don't touch mine." he said and started his food also since his stomach started to hurt.

You pouted and just continued your food. Luhan swallowed hard his first bite, \*Taste good.\* he thought.

"Delicious, right?" you snapped, peeking on his expression. Instead of answering you, he just shrugged and took another bite. You made a face before focusing on your food.

It was already 8:25 in the evening when both you and Luhan finished the food. Luhan stood up, "Let's go back before the gate will close." he said.

You ignored him and turned to the counter, "Ahjumma, give me another plate of dukbokki please.." you called. "Kay, coming!" the ahjumma called back.

Luhan stared at you in disbelief, "Seriously? 1 plate isn't enough to you? The gate will close at 9:00pm and it's already 8:30pm. We only have 30 minutes to go back. I don't want to get caught." he hissed.

"But I'm still hungry.." you whined. Luhan rolled his eyes, "Whatever! Just stay here whenever you want. I'll go back now." with that, he walked away without turning back.

Just then, your order came. You immediately grabbed it and happily ate it. You didn't even care if the gate was closed so you enjoyed the moment of eating your favorite food.

Exactly 9:00pm when you finally finished your food. You paid for it and headed back to school. You arrived there at 9:12pm.

Expectedly, the gate was already closed. Without a second, you removed your bag from your back and threw it over the gate. Next thing you did was climbed on the gate.

Safely, you reached inside the school without having a hard time. Honestly, you were good at doing those kind of things so you wouldn't bother yourself to panic.

Once you got inside, you reached your bag from the ground and put it back to your back before walking away.

## CHAPTER 12

Little did you know, there's a figure hiding from the dark spot as you did climb on the gate.

As you disappeared, the figure stepped on the light spot and revealed Luhan. He glanced at your way, \*I shouldn't wait for her. Well.. why did I go with her on the first place?\* Luhan shook his head and with a sigh, he climbed also on the gate then headed to their dorm.

---

Reaching the dorm, you carefully open the door and stepped inside. The atmosphere was dark. You walked towards your room with a silent motion.

Just when you reach your room, the lights went open. You startled as you put your hand to your chest. You looked around and saw your 3 friends staring at you with a frown on their faces.

“Yah! I almost got a heart attack, you know that!” you snapped. Yuri rolled her eyes, “Do you know how worried we are about you? Where have you been?” she asked as she stepped forward to your direction.

“Uh-oh.. I just eat outside the school. Mian for worrying you girls..” you apologized. “I told you, she went out to eat.” Yoona said.

Seohyun shook her head, “I wonder why you always want to eat outside the school in this late hour? What if the guards caught you?” she asked.

You chuckled, “Look! I’m safely got here! You know that I can escape easily from them.” you proudly said.

They let out a sigh, “If you say so..” they cooed as they walk passed you. You pouted but also headed to the room that you were sharing with Seohyun.

---

Annoyed, Luhan stepped inside their dorm. He still couldn’t believe that he waited for you just to make sure that you can enter the school safely.

He reached his hair in frustration

as he entered the room that he was sharing with Kris. Forgetting that there’s someone in the room, he closed the door with a loud bang.

Kris sat up because of the loud sound that Luhan cause. “Mwoya!” he groaned in annoyance.

Luhan ignored him and just headed to his bed then laid immediately. Kris followed his moved with a frown, “What happen to you again? And it’s already late. Where have you been?” he asked.

Luhan shrugged, “No need to know. Just continue your sleep.” he snapped and closed his eyes.

Kris made a face in annoyance. With a rolled of eyes, Kris laid back on his bed and drifted to sleep.

---

Morning fastly came. As usual, you went to school together with your friends but except for leaving a letter on Luhan’s locker.

Freely, both you and Yoona headed to your first class as Yuri and Seohyun got separated and also headed to their respective classes.

On the other hand, EXO did their usual routine. They went to their respective classes with a fresh and cool looks that every girl couldn’t take off their eyes from them.

Separated, Luhan, Xiumin and Kris walked together since they were in the same class.

---

In the middle of the class, you suddenly received a message from Luhan.

*to: Sooyoung*

*You better not try to escape during lunch or I’ll kick you in this school.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

You frowned. You took a glance on your teacher and saw her busy writing something on the board. With that, you motioned your fingers to texted him back.

*to: Luhan*

*Kick me in this school? Hah! Are you kidding me? Who are you? The owner of this school?*

*from: Love tutor*

Luhan raised an eyebrow on your reply. With a smirk, he texted back.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Well.. You can say that.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

\*What’s this supposed to be mean?\* you thought after reading his text message. You glanced at Yoona and tugged on her uniform.

Yoona turned to you, “Wae?” she asked, whispering. “Did you know who’s the owner of this school?” you whispered back.

Yoona paused, “I don’t really know but I think Mr. Lee Sooman is the owner and Lu family have half share also.” she stated.

“Lu family? You mean..” you trailed off. “Luhan’s family.” Yoona continued for you. Your shoulders fell as you face-palmed yourself in disbelief.

“Waeyo? Did Luhan say something to you?” she asked. You shook your head, “Ani. I was just asking.” you replied and let out a sigh.

“Are you sure? Seems like something is bothering you.” she muttered. You shook your head once again, “I’m okay.. It’s nothing.” you assured her. With a nod, Yoona focus on the class again.

You stared at your phone, \*This monster-jerk is really annoying!\* with another sigh, you started texting him back.

*to: Luhan*

*Yeah! I know that your family have shares in this school but you can’t just kick me in this school because I’m paying.*

*from: Love tutor*

Luhan smirked at your reply, \*You don’t want to give up easily huh?\*

*to: Sooyoung*

*Now, you’re trying to trick me huh? I know that you’re not paying any money here in school. You’re scholar, aren’t you?*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

Your eyes widen in horror when you saw Luhan’s reply. Since he already know about your background, you decided to not

giving him a reply.

---

At lunch, you meet up with your friends to eat lunch together.

“Come on, I’m already hungry to death.” Yuri whined as Seohyun nodded in agreement.

“Okay, kaja!” Yoona said as she started to walked and so did Yuri and Seohyun. “Wait up!” you snapped.

They stopped and turned back to you. “Please do me a favor.” you said. “Favor? What kind of favor?” Seohyun asked.

“Just pretend that you girls didn’t know about the dare between me and Luhan.” you said. “Waeyo?” Yuri asked.

“Just do my favor please.. I’ll explain later.” you said. Finally, they nodded in understanding. “Gomawo.” you said hugging them one by one.

“Aigoo! You don’t need to hug us you know..” Yoona snapped. You giggled, “That’s my way of thanking someone.” you muttered.

“Aish! Okay, okay. Now, shall we go and eat?” Yuri snapped. You chuckled and nodded. With that, all you 3 headed to the canteen.

---

As the 3 of you reach the canteen, all of you headed to your usual place. Just right after you sat on your chair, you met eyes with Luhan. He was sitting on their usual place also, across your table.

You gulped and immediately lowered your head, not wanting to meet his gaze. Just then, you felt your phone vibrated. You pulled out your phone and open the message.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Afraid to get kick in this school huh?*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

You looked up and you saw him smirked. You looked away, not wanting to see his jerk face. You stared at his message once again as you held your phone tightly.

Just a few minutes, your phone vibrated again.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Cancel all your schedules after class if you do have. We will have our first session. I’ll text to you later where are we going to meet. Don’t be late or else, I’ll force you to leave this school.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

You bit your lower lip, \*This monster-jerk! What kind of threat is this? This is unfair!\* you thought, pissed.

## CHAPTER 13

*Kriiiiiing! Kriiiiiing!*

The bell rang for the end of the school day. As the teacher left, you keep all your things to your bag. Just when you finished, you



suddenly felt your phone vibrated. You pulled it out and saw a new text message.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Meet me at room 512 now.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

You frowned, \*That high? Aish!\* annoyed, you put your bag on your back and exited the classroom.

You found your 3 friends waiting for you there. “Finally, you went out.” Yuri said. “Oh.. Mianhe but I can’t go to the dorm with the 3 of you. I have somewhere to go.” you apologized.

“Where?” Yoona asked. You motioned them to lean closer to you as they obeyed. You lean in before whispering, “I’m meeting Luhan today. I need to work on my dare now.” you said and lean back.

Your friends lean back also. They nodded in understanding. “So.. how about you girls? How’s your assigned dare going?” you asked.

“Well, I’ve actually passed my first quiz in math.” Seohyun proudly beamed. You nodded then turned to Yoona.

“No need to ask me. The assigned dare to me is the easy one.” Yoona replied. You rolled your eyes before turning to Yuri. She paused and let out a sigh, “I’m still looking for a nerd boyfriend.” she stated. You chuckled, “Well good luck to you.” you said.

Yuri pouted. “Also to you. Good luck with you meeting with

Luhan today.” Yoona snapped.

Her words hit you, “Right! I have to go now. Bye!” with that said, you rushed upstairs since you’re only at the first floor.

“Aish! Why did he want to meet on that higher room. Chinchaja?! 5th floor?! Aish! That monster-jerk!” you cursed while running up the stairs. As much as you wanted to use the elevator, you can’t because it’s not available in this hour.

---

“Hyung! Let’s have a practice now!” Sehun said. Luhan shrugged, “I can’t. I have somewhere important to go now.” he said that made the other members gaze at him.

“Is that really important to skip our practice?” Lay asked. “Yes, it is. I have to go now. Just practice for now without me. I’ll attend the practice next time.” Luhan said and walked away.

Sehun pouted as he watched his hyung walked away. Kai wrapped his arms around Sehun’s shoulder, “Don’t bother about him. I think that was really important for skipping our practice.” he muttered.

Sehun sighed and nodded. “Come on guys!” “Let’s go!” Kris and Suho called. With that, EXO without Luhan headed to their practice room.

Luhan on the other hand, went to use the elevator. Since he has a power in the school, he freely used it without someone bothering him.

As the elevator stopped, Luhan went out and headed to room

512. As he entered the room, he found no one there. With a frown, he sat in one of the chair there.

Moments later, you still nowhere to be seen. Another frown formed on Luhan’s face once again. \*What’s taking her so long?\*

Luhan pulled out his phone and was about to call you when the door burst open and revealed you, panting hard.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Why are you late?” he asked. You rolled your eyes, still panting hard. You then closed the door behind you.

“Lock the door before someone saw us.” Luhan ordered. You did what he told and headed towards his direction and sat on the seat next to him.

“I should be here in time if the elevator is available. Or you should choose at least a room in the first floor or second floor.” you muttered.

Luhan raised an eyebrow even more, “Are you complaining to me now?” he snapped. “Uh-oh.. Ani, I was just explaining.” you excused.

“You must.” he said. You made a face. Just then, you smell something that your nose doesn’t use to it. You stared at Luhan.

“What?” he asked in annoyance. “Did you put a perfume on?” you asked, slowly staying your face away from him. “Of course I did.” he replied with a rolling eyes.

After hearing his reply, you

immediately stood up covering your nose and stepped away from him. You went up on the flat form near the board then decided to sit on the teacher's table.

You removed your hand from your nose and faced Luhan, "Don't put any perfume for our next sessions." you said. Luhan raised an eyebrow, "Why should I?" he snapped.

"I hate perfumes so deal with it if you want my company." you replied. Luhan rolled his eyes in annoyance. "Let's just start, shall we?" he snapped.

"Okay! So since it's only our first session, I only prepared some questions for you." you started. "Okay. What all those?" Luhan asked.

"First question," you started as you placed both of your palms on your side, flatted on the edge of the table. "Did you ever talk to any girls?" you asked.

"Yes, my mom." he simply replied. You face-palmed yourself, "Except her." you snapped. Luhan shook his head, "Besides her, I haven't talk to any girls." he replied.

"But you're talking to me right now." you snapped. Luhan stared at you for a moment, studying you from head to toe. "I never thought you're a girl though." he said.

Your eyes widen, "Mwo?!" you gasped in annoyance. Luhan shrugged, "I was just saying what I was seeing." he simply replied.

You made a face, "Whatever! Now, for the next question. "Did

you ever felt something inside your chest when a girl is near you?" you asked.

He simply shook his head. You let ou a sigh and throw him another question, "Holding a girl's hand, did you already experience that? Even accidentally?" you asked.

Luhan open his mouth to say something when you suddenly cut him off, "Except your mother or any of your relatives."

Luhan closed his mouth and shook his head, "Ani." With another sigh, you spoke. "Don't answer me with mentioning any of your relative to my questions, okay?"

Luhan boringly nodded. "Next question, why aren't you talking to any girls here in school?" you asked.

"Because they're boring." he replied with a quick seconds. You frowned, "I guess I'm not boring then." you said. "Because you're not a girl." Luhan snapped.

You shot him a glare but Luhan just rolled his eyes, "Just continue with your question, will you?" he snapped. "Araseo, monster-jerk." you said with a low voice.

"Are you saying something?" he asked with an eyebrow raised. You shook you head, "Nothing! Next question, why I didn't saw you smile? I only saw you smile after I sent you my 2nd letter." you said.

"Because there's no reason for me to smile." he replied. "Then, why did you smile on that day?" you pointed out.

"Because there's a reason." he replied. "What's the reason then?" you asked. Luhan paused, even himself didn't know the reason why did he smiled on that day.

"It's because of my letter, isn't it?" you asked, peeking on him. Luhan shrugged, "We already finished on that question. Just ask another." he snapped.

You made a face but asked another question, "Last question, what are you feeling right now while talking to me?"

Luhan paused before answering,

"Nothing.."

## CHAPTER 14

"Nothing.." Luhan responded. You face-palmed yourself after hearing his heartless replied.

You jumped off the table and straightened up, "Nothing? Are you sure?" you asked again. Luhan simply nodded, "Wae? Do I need to feel something?" he asked raising an eyebrow.

You nodded, "You must. You're really a cold-hearted person." you commented. "So what if I am?" he snapped in annoyance.

"Well.. Base in our conversation

today, I think your answer 'nothing' on my question is not true." you started then you continued, "First, you let me help you about this. Second, you talk to me in a simple way. Lastly, you answered all the questions I asked you. In conclusion, you're already comfortable around me." you stated.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, "Eh?" he then shrugged, "I don't think so.." he said. You rolled your eyes, "Whatever! I'm your love tutor and you're just my love student so I know what I am saying and believe me, that's what you're feeling right now. Felt comfortable." you said.

Luhan rolled his eyes, "If you say so. Is our session finish?" he asked. You shook your head, "Not yet." you replied. "Then what are we going to do now?" he asked. "Talk." you replied.

"Mwo?" he gaped. "You have to talk to me. It will help you to fall in love with a girl and since I'm a girl, you can practice with me." you explained.

"Seriously? You? A girl?" he snapped. You shot him a glare, "Do you really want my help or not?" you asked, annoyed.

Luhan paused for a moment. "Before I answer that question, I want to ask you first. Why are you helping me without a payment?" he asked, serious.

"When I was about to say it to you last time, you told me that you don't care and I respect that so I'm not going to tell you my reason. Now, answer my question, do you want my help or not?" you asked once again.

"To be honest, no." he replied. You raised an eyebrow, "Then why did you ask for my help?" you asked back.

He shrugged, "Just wanna try." he said. "Try to fall in love?" you asked. He nodded. You shook your head, "How poor creature you are." you said.

"Mwo?!" he give you a glare. You stared at him in horror, \*Aigoo! The monster-jerk is here again.\* you thought.

"Just saying my opinion." you muttered. He rolled his eyes then went back to faced you, "How about you?" he asked.

"Me? What do you mean?" you asked in confusion. "Did you ever fall in love with someone?" he asked.

You made a pause on it before giving him your answer, "Yes, I do." you replied. "How does it feel?" he asked innocently.

You went silent, remembering the feeling of falling in love. "Heaven." you said. "Mwo?" you heard Luhan asked.

You smiled, "Falling in love with someone feels like you're in heaven. It started with something called 'crush' and end up with love. The moment you saw your crush, it seems like you saw an angel. Angel that you wanted to be on your side that you wanted to protect you all the time. Every single day, all you want to see is him. Day by day, that crush became love. And the most important is when the person you love," you paused and looked at Luhan.

Then you continued, "loves you too. When the time you are

always with him, it feels like you were walking towards the moon. The moment he hold your hand, it feels like there was an angel guiding you. The moment he give you a hug, it feels like were hugging the clouds. The moment he give you a kiss, you could feel butterflies on your stomach that make you fly like an angels. That was.." you paused, "..the feeling of falling in love." you said, finishing your sentence.

Luhan stared at you, speechless. Based on what you said all those words, seems like you're referring to someone special to you. "So, what happen to him?" he finally asked.

You stared at him in shock, "Mwo?" you gasped. "You're referring to someone, aren't you?" he asked.

You let out a nervous laugh, "Ani. I'm not referring to someone. I'm explaining the feeling of falling in love. That's all." you said.

"Oh really?" he raised an eyebrow. "I think our first session will end at this point. Let's meet up again for our next session. I gotta go now. Annyeong!" with that quick said, you hurriedly exited the room and closed it.

Luhan stared at the door that you closed just now, \*She's weird but I could feel that she was referring to someone when she explain the whole 'falling in love' thing.\*

Luhan let out a sigh, \*Is falling in love really feels like heaven? I don't think it is. But somehow, I want to feel that kind of feeling..\*

---

Just when you stepped out the room, your walk started to get slower. You let out a sigh and looked up. \*I can't believe I still didn't forget you..\*

You went downstairs until you reach the first floor. You then started walking towards the girls' dorm. As you were walking, a one familiar place caught your eyes that made you stopped.

You walked towards the empty room. That room is not ordinary for you. A one special room for you, to be exact. The room that you used to stay, together with **him**.

You entered the room and went straight to the corner. There was a guitar there. You took it before sitting on a chair.

The guitar has some dust on it. You carefully wiped it before you motion it to your lap. You tested the strings as you touch it.

You smiled, \*I still remember the time we spent together here at this room.\* you then started playing the guitar with the song **hetaught** to you from the past.

Hearing the sounds of the harmony of the guitar made your eyes wet. Just then, your tears started falling down your cheeks while you keep playing the guitar.

As your tears get heavy, your hand suddenly dropped. You can't continue playing the guitar anymore because of your cries.

You sobbed, "Why did you

leave me?" you whispered between your sobs.

"Did you know how empty my heart was without you? How I wish you'll still come back here to me because I miss you. I really miss you.." you whispered again as your tears didn't stop on falling from your eyes.

## CHAPTER 15

After an hour of crying, you dragged your foot towards the dorm. You carefully open the main door and entered it.

"Oh! You're finally back!" Yoona clapped as she noticed your presense. Seems like you didn't hear her as you continued walking.

"YAH! SOOYOUNG-AH!" Yuri shouted that made you jumped a little, completely startled by the sudden shout.

Your gaze turned to your friends' direction and titled your head, "Eh?"

Yuri walked closer to you. She studied your face and you noticed it immediately. You looked away, trying to hide your teary eyes from her.

"What happen to your eyes? Did you cried?" she asked in a worried tone. "Ani.." you replied without looking at her.

Yuri reached your chin it lifted up to make you face her. "See? Your eyes were red." she said.

You snapped her hand away and

lowered your head, "It's nothing. Don't mind it. I'm tired. I want to sleep now."

"Don't tell me, Luhan is the person that made you cry?" she snapped as Yoona and Seohyun remained silent and just listen to the conversation behind Yuri.

"No, he did nothing to me." you replied. "Don't defend him. He's the only person you meet up just now so he probably the one who male you cry. Wait here, I'll go talk to him." Yuri was about to leave but you held her back, grabbing her by her arm.

Yuri looked down to your hand holding on her arm then turned to face you. You spoke, "I already told you. He did NOTHING to me so don't bother anyone." you said emphasizing the word 'nothing'.

"Stop. Yuri, just do what she said." Seohyun said, joining the conversation. Yoona stepped out, "That's right. Sooyoung, go eat first before you go to bed." she reminded.

You finally released Yuri and shook your head, "I don't want to eat. I want to sleep now. Jalja.." was all you said before walking off to your room that you was sharing with Seohyun.

"I should sleep now too. Jalja Yuri and Yoona." Seohyun said then followed you.

Yuri watched you and Seohyun walked away. "I could feel Luhan did something bad to her. I just know it." Yuri whispered but loud enough for Yoona to hear it. Yoona gaze at her, "Like I said, just do what she said. Don't bother anyone." she

reminded.

With a sigh, Yuri nodded. "Okay, we must go to sleep now too." Yoona said. Yuri nodded again. With that, the two of them walked towards their room.

---

Morning fast came. Your eyes were still a bit red because you secretly continued your cries as you entered your room last night.

Carefully, you put an eyeglasses on. You wanted to hide your eyes to everyone but so you know, your friends noticed it immediately.

"After you cried, now you're wearing eyeglasses to hide your red eyes huh?" Yuri snapped as you stepped out from your room. "Yeah! And she even continued her cries last night as we entered our room." Seohyun said behind you.

You bit your bottom lip, \*Aish! I thought my cries wan't loud for her to hear but I guess it is.\* you thought, disappointed to yourself.

"Believe me, If I saw that heartless Luhan. I won't miss a chance to have a talk with him." Yuri said as Yoona elbowed her. Yuri turned to Yoona, "What?" she asked in annoyance. Yoona nodded to your direction, gesturing. Yuri turned to you.

"Umm.. Mianhe for last night but I'm assuring you that Luhan didn't do something bad to me. Please don't bother him because you know, as I have said to you last time that my dare is a secret

right? I don't want Luhan knew that you 3 knows about this." you said.

Yuri rolled her eyes, "Let's just go." she snapped and walked away. With a sigh, you followed. Yoona and Seohyun stared at each other for a while before following the two of you.

As the usual, you and your friends got separated for your respective classes. Since you and Yoona have the same first class, both you two walked together to the class.

Hours quickly passed. The lunch came in a quick time. As always, you eat lunch with you friends across EXO's table. You could feel Yuri keep glaring at Luhan as you just lowered your head, biting your lower lip.

Luhan seems busy with his friends and food at the same time so he didn't even care to looked around. It was lucky for you so that he wouldn't notice Yuri's glares.

While you was eating, you suddenly felt your phone vibrated. It was a text message from Luhan.

*to: Sooyoung*

*What's with that eye glasses? You're nerd now huh? Oh by the way, Don't forget for our next session later. Let's meet at the same room we used yesterday for our first session, 512.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

You looked up to check for Luhan but EXO were already gone. "You're going to meet up with him again?" Yuri snapped.

You looked up and saw her raising an eyebrow to you. You exited the message on your phone and placed it back to your pocket. "It's for our next session and also part of my dare." you muttered.

Just then, the bell rang. With that, all of you went back to the usual thing. Going back to the classes.

---

As the school ended, you carefully stood up and stepped out from the classroom.

"Sooyoung-ah! Sooyoung-ah!" you heard voices called you. You looked up then saw both Yoona and Seohyun running towards your direction.

You frowned in confusion as you titled your head to your two friends, "What? Why? Where's Yuri?" you asked continuously.

Yoona started panting, "Exactly! Yuri hurriedly went up to room 512 to have a talk with Luhan." she breath out.

Your eyes widen in horror, "Mwo? How did she—" you couldn't finished your sentence and hurriedly rushed upstairs. Yoona and Seohyun quickly followed you.

\*Aigoo! I hate this stairs! Yuri did saw Luhan's text message that's why she knew where Luhan was right now..\* you though in disgust as you keep going upstairs.

---

\*Aish! She's late again. Where is she?\* Luhan hissed on his mind as he glance at his wrist-



watch.

Just then, the door burst open. Luhan rolled his eyes as he looked up, “Finally—” his word was cut off when he saw a different figure at the door.

That girl gave him a glare as she walk towards him then he shouted, “Yah! What have you done with my friend? Did you hurt her huh?”

Luhan stared at the girl, completely confused on what she was saying but the girl continued, “She cried all night because of what you did to her. How could you hurt a girl to make her cry! What are you?! An alien?! I know you doesn’t have a heart but you don’t have to hurt my fri—”

“Stop it Yuri!” Yuri didn’t even finish her sentence as you barged inside the room and snapped her. Yuri looked at her back and saw you at the door as Yoona and Seohyun appeared at your back, panting.

You hurriedly walk towards her and held her back, “I already told you he did nothing to me, NOTHING. Please go now.” you said with a serious tone.

Luhan stared at you with a confuse look on his face. You bit your bottom lip, “Now, he knows that my friends know about our deal.\* you thought in horror.

“Sooyoung-ah..” Yuri whispered. “Please leave for now. Let’s talk at the dorm later.” you pleaded. Yuri lowered her head then left. Yoona and Seohyun guided Yuri downstairs.

You then closed the door and locked it. You went back to Luhan and study his face for a moment. For some reason, his expression was hard to explain.

Luhan stared back until he caught your red eyes. He frowned that made you bit your bottom lip in horror.

\*She cried because of the guy he was talking about yesterday. I’m pretty sure about it.\* Luhan thought, noticing your red eyes through the eyeglasses that you were wearing.

With a fear inside your chest, you swallowed before started explaining. “Umm.. Luhan, sorry for my friend. She misunderstood everything. And about my friends knowing about our deal, sorry but I accidentally mentioned about it to them. But I promise that my friends won’t say about this to anyone. I really am sorry for what Yuri acted earlier. She just mistaken—”

Before you could finish your sentence, Luhan cut you off. “Quit explaining. Just start our session.”

You were totally stunned by his sudden changed of attitude. \*He’s not angry that my friends knew about our deal? Unbelievable!\* you thought as you stared at him in surprise.

## CHAPTER 16

You were still staring at Luhan in surprise. You couldn’t believe that you heard him right. It feels like you were talking to a different person.

Luhan raised an eyebrow as he noticed your stares, “What? Are we going to start our session or not?” he snapped. You shook away your thoughts and realized he’s for real.

“Umm.. Aren’t you mad at me?” you breathe out. Luhan frowned. “Umm.. You know, my friends knew about this. Aren’t you mad at me because I told them about this?” you trailed off.

Luhan shrugged, “That’s already happened. No one could ever change it back. And,” he paused, “I’m mad but I don’t want argue anymore. Just start our session so we could finish it fast.” he snapped.

You pouted but nodded. “Araseo monster-jerk..” you mumbled to yourself. “You’re saying?” Luhan raised an eyebrow.

You looked up an shook your head, “Nothing.” You cleared your throat, “So,” you started, “May I ask you how did you become part of EXO?” you asked.

Luhan frowned, “Why should I give you my answer?” he asked. You rolled your eyes, “I’m your love tutor, remember? You should answer my questions.” you stated.

Luhan shrugged, “Ask me another question except that. EXO will remain a secret to everyone.” he said. You let out a sigh then lightly moved up your eyeglasses, “Okay, okay. If you say so..”

Luhan stared at you, “I wonder why you’re friend mistaken me as the person who made you cry.” he suddenly said.

You looked up at him in surprise but then rolled your eyes, "Because you're bad." you said. Luhan gave you a death glare as you gulped and covered your mouth.

"I have a question and I'm curious about it. In our last session, you said falling in love is like a heaven which is you will feel like flying." he started. You nodded on his statement.

Then Luhan continued, "Then, why did you cry? Is falling in love will give you pain also?" he asked innocently.

You gulped by the sudden question but then said, "Yeah. Love has two different meanings. First is happiness. It usually happens when the person you love loves you back. Second is pain. Pain in the heart because sometimes, the person you love doesn't love you back or maybe they love someone else."

"So, he didn't love you back?" Luhan asked. "Mwo?" you asked. "You cried because he didn't love you back, right?" he asked.

You lowered your head and shook it, "Even me, myself. I don't know what's the answer for your question." you replied. Luhan stared at you curiously.

You lifted your head up, "But I love him, a lot." you stated as a tear fell down to your cheek. Luhan just stared at you, not knowing what to say.

You fake a laugh and wiped your tear away, "I'm so stupid to wait for him. It's been already 2 years since he left me. He didn't

even say goodbye to me before he left." you said as another tear fell from your eyes but you quickly wiped it away.

You heaved a sigh, "Aigoo! Here I am again. Why I'm telling you this? You won't understand me, never." you said. "How so?" he asked.

"Because you never experience the feeling of falling in love." you said. "What meaning of falling in love? The first one or two?" he asked. "Both." you replied.

"Then teach me." he snapped. "Oh yeah! I almost forgot that I'm teaching you to fall in love. But honestly," you paused, "Falling in love isn't a subject for you to learn it. It is kind of feeling that your heart voluntarily feels. No one could choose you a person to fall in love with." you said.

"What are you saying now? We're going to stop this?" he asked. You shook your head, "No."

Luhan frowned, "What? I don't get it." he said in confusion. "What I'm explaining just now is for other people not you. You're different to them. Those people have a heart but you doesn't." you muttered.

Luhan shot you a glare, "Mwo??" You swallowed hard, "What I mean is, those people are talking to everyone unlike you, you didn't talk much especially to the girls. Am I right?"

Luhan shrugged, "And so?" You clapped your hands together, "I have an idea!" you beamed. Luhan raised an eyebrow to you.

"I'll give you an assignment." you said. "Assignment?!" Luhan gasped. You nodded, "Your first assignment is you need to show me what you have learned in our session. For example, talk to some random things that every boy did to the girls. Or being a gentleman." you said.

Luhan gave you a are-you-serious look. "I'm serious so be ready for our next session which is tomorrow. Show me what have you learned. So, I'm going now." you said then walked away.

Luhan stood up and caught you up that made you stop. You frowned, "What?" you asked.

"I'll go first." he said as he walked passed by you. You sniffed then immediately covered your nose, "Aigoo! You wear perfume again. Don't wear any perfume tomorrow!" you yelled for him to hear it. Luhan ignored you and kept his way to the dorm.

You then removed your hand from your nose and breathe out. "Aigoo! I will die if he keeps wear perfume." you whispered before going back to the dorm.

---

As you entered the dorm, you saw your 3 friends sitting there. You could see that they were worried with something.

As they saw you, they immediately rush to you. "Gwenchana?" Yuri worriedly asked you as Yoona and Seohyun stared at you, also worried.

You simply nodded, "I'm

perfectly fine.” you said. “He didn’t do anything to you? Did I scare him so much?” Yuri asked sarcastically.

You chuckled, “I told you, he did nothing to me. He’s not the reason of my cries.” you said. “Then who?” Seohyun asked.

Your face fell as you remained silent. “Is it because of K—” before Yoona could finish her sentence you already cut her off, “Don’t mention him anymore. I don’t want to talk about it. I’m tired, I want to rest now.” you said as you walked towards your room.

“But you didn’t eat yet.” Yoona snapped. “I’m not hungry.” was all you said before you completely entered the room.

Your 3 friends glance at each other as they watched you worriedly. “So, it’s **him** again.” Yuri whispered as Yoona and Seohyun let out a heavy sigh.

## CHAPTER 17

It was almost midnight. Luhan was still awake, sitting at his bed. He was currently at his deep thoughts. He was wondering about the assignment you left for him.

He suddenly groaned as he run his hands up to his hair, “Ahhh! I’m going insane!!”

“Shut up! I’m sleeping right here!” a voice suddenly snapped. It was Kris. He was already lying on his bed, trying to sleep but Luhan interrupted

him.

Luhan ignored him as he rolled his eyes. He heaved a sigh and went back to think about his ‘love’ assignment. He reminisced the conversation that both of you did earlier.

:: *flashback* ::

*You clapped your hands together, “I have an idea!” you beamed. Luhan raises an eyebrow to you.*

*“I’ll give you an assignment.” you said. “Assignment?!” Luhan gasped. You nodded, “Your first assignment is you need to show me what you have learned in our session. For example, talk to me with some random things that every boy do to the girls. Or being a gentleman.” you said.*

:: *end of flashback* ::

\*Talk to her or being gentleman means me, being nice?\* there was a pause as Luhan thought about it.

Moments later, a smirk appeared on his face. “Yeah! I know what to do now. She will be shock for sure~” Luhan said, grinning.

“Shhh!” for the second time, Kris hissed Luhan once again. Luhan rolled his eyes at his roommate again and finally lay on his bed. Soon enough, drifted off to sleep.

Meanwhile, you was lying on your bed. Still awake and silently crying. Seohyun, your roommate was already sleeping while you keep crying silently.

\*Why is it so hard to forget you? I feel empty without you. I

thought I completely forget you but every time I saw that place, my heart crashed into pieces. It hurts,\* you sob silently, \*..a lot.. Oppa, will you ever come back here and be with me again?\*

You keep crying until you fell asleep with a heavy broken heart.

---

Morning fast came. EXO except for Luhan wake up early like usual. Irritated, Kris forcely wake him up. With a groan, Luhan stretched his arms along with his legs that made him kicked Kris.

“Oh! What are you doing there Kris?” Luhan asked innocently, rubbing his eyes as he saw Kris lying on the floor.

Kris give him a hard look and rolled his eyes, “Whatever! Just get up and be ready for school.” he said and left while rubbing his butt.

With a short pause, Luhan finally got up from his bed and followed Kris outside the room. Luhan and the other EXO get ready for school. After wearing his uniform, Luhan sprayed himself some perfume around his uniform.

With that, EXO left their dorm.

On the other hand, you woke up early than usual. You take a bath then wore your uniform. As you stepped out the room, you found your 3 friends already eating their breakfast. You walked towards them and joined for the food.

You felt their stares focusing on you. You looked up, completely

confused. "You should stop thinking about him. Your eyes will be forever red if you continued thinking about that bastard." Yuri said.

Yoona elbowed her. "What? I was just saying the truth. What kind of boyfriend will leave his girlfriend just to study abroad?" Yuri said in annoyance.

You bit your bottom lip after hearing those words which is true.

"Yuri.. He just did it because of his parents' will." Seohyun snapped. Yuri raised an eyebrow, "Exactly! If he really loves Sooyoung, he won't leave her to study abroad just because his parents told him to. He's also a person who can decide by himself on what he wanted to do. And he even left without saying any words to Sooyoung. He's totally a stupid, bastard, whatever!"

You bit your bottom lip and clenched your fist tightly. Before any of them could say a word, you harshly stood up. "Enough! I'm going first.." with that said, you grabbed your eye glasses and wear it. You then hopped your bag on your back and left the dorm.

"Aish! Watch your words." Yoona hissed to Yuri as you disappeared from the sight. "But I'm just worried about her. She needs to realize that her so-called boyfriend will never come back to her anymore." Yuri, being your straight-to-the-point bestfriend stated.

"We understand you but we need to understand her too. She need more time to completely forget him." Seohyun said. "It's been already 2 years since that

bastard left." Yuri said.

"But she does love him so much and it's hard for her to forget him easily. Just give us her more time to completely forget him. Do it not because you need to. Do it as a friend to her." Yoona said.

Yuri made a pause then sighed. "Yeah.. She's still my friend after all." she whispered. "Come on. Let's get going now." Seohyun said.

With that, the 3 left the dorm.

---

Time fast goes by. The ring of the bell could be heard. It's already time for lunch.

You meet up with your friends at the canteen. It was filled of awkward atmosphere between the 4 of you. Until now, you still remember what Yuri had said about your boyfriend or maybe ex-boyfriend now to you.

Yoona elbowed Yuri, 'Talk to her now.' she mouthed. Yuri bit his bottom lip then turned to you, "Umm.. Sooyoung-ah." she called.

There was a pause before you turned to her. "Mianhe.. I didn't mean to say that." Yuri started. You shook your head, "Ani. I think you're right. If he really loves me, he won't leave without a word." you said.

Yuri shook her head with a waved of hand, "Ani. Don't take seriously my words. Just don't mind that." she said. You shook your head again, "I think I need to let go of my past that I'm with him, from now on. I need to forget him. Ani, I *want* to

forget him." you said.

Your 3 friends glance at each other then looked at you in worry. You looked up and gave them an assuring smile, "Don't worry. I will forget him soon.." you said and started your food.

With a proud smile, your friends joined you to eat. Suddenly, your phone vibrated. There's a new text message came from Luhan.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Don't forget our session later. Same room after class.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

After reading the message, you glance at EXO table but surprisingly, Luhan was nowhere to be seen. All the members were there except him. You wonder why.

---

*Kriiiiiiiiiing!! Kriiiiiing!!*

The bell finally rang for the end of the class. As you usually do, you straightly headed to room 512 to meet up with Luhan. Right after you entered the classroom, a smiling Luhan greeted you. He waved, "Annyeong!"

You frowned as you stepped backward, \*What happen to him? Strange..\* was all on your mind.

Just then Luhan started walking towards you that made you stepped backward again. Until then, you realized that Luhan was already hugging you.

You froze right on your spot. “L-Luhan...” you managed to say. Luhan smirked, “Wae my tutor?” “D-Did you w-wear perfume?” you breath out.

“Huh?” Luhan was confused. He then slowly released you. There you was, with a pale face. Luhan stared at you in shock.

“I t-told you to n-not wear perfume.. I h-hate them..” with that said, your eyes closed and you fainted. Luhan’s eyes widen.

“Yah! Don’t play around. Wake up! Open your eyes!” Luhan started shaking you, believing that you were just acting.

“Look, I was just trying the assignment you leaved to me yesterday. Come on, open your eyes now..” Luhan keep shaking you, trying to convince you to open your eyes but you didn’t.

“Shit! She really did hate perfume. Aigoo!” Luhan hissed as he lifted you up. He gave you piggy back ride on the way to the school’s clinic.

Some of the students around the way where Luhan passed by looked at him in surprise. For the first time, Luhan caught with a girl. Luckily, no one see your face since it was burying on Luhan’s shoulder.

Luhan hurriedly entered the clinic as the time both of you reach it. “What happened?” the nurse asked immediately. “She fainted.” Luhan replied.

“Okay. This way. Lay her here.” the nurse ordered, gesturing the bed. Luhan did. “Please take a seat first. I’ll check up on her.”

the nurse said. Luhan nodded and took the seat a little near to the bed.

Moments later, the nurse called Luhan. “What cause of her sudden faint? Is she alright?” he asked. The nurse nodded, “She will wake up after a few minutes. The reason of her sudden faint is because of hypersensitivity.” she said.

“Hypersensitivity?” Luhan asked, confused. The nurse nodded again, “Well.. for the others, It’s perfume allergy but I’m pretty sure that it’s hypersensitivity for her which is giving her a hard time to breath every time she smell the scent of perfumes. Especially when it’s really near to her nose. Perfumes makes her suffocate easily and will cause of her to faint.” she explained.

“So.. Did she need any medicine?” Luhan asked. The nurse chuckled, “No, no need for any medicine. Just keep the perfumes far from her. Just wait until she wakes up. I’ll leave you here with her first.” with that, she left.

Luhan turned to you. Without permission, he took your phone from your pocket and dialed one of your friend’s number. It was Yoona. He told them that you’re at clinic and now, they’re rushing to be there.

Luhan fixed his uniform, trying to ease the scent of his perfume. The strong scent of perfume vanished but there’s still left, only a little though. He then took the seat beside your bed and gaze at you. Your eyes were still closed. \*I forgot you told me that you hate perfumes..\*

Just then, your eyes slowly

open. Your vision was still blurred but you could see a blurry face in front of you. That was familiar to you. “Oppa..” you managed to whispered.

Luhan stared at you in shock. You blinked your eyes and to your disappointment, it was Luhan. “Oppa?” he suddenly asked, confused.

You looked away, “Mian.. I thought you’re someone else..” you said. \*The last time I fainted because of perfume, he was here right next to me..\* you sadly reminiscend. Before Luhan could speak, your friends rushed inside the clinic.

“Sooyoung-ah!” they called. “Oh.. Yoona, Yuri, Seohyun..” you weakly whispered as you carefully sat up.

“Gwenchana?” Seohyun asked. You weakly smiled and nodded. “The nurse said you fainted because of the scent of perfume again.” Yoona said. “Don’t worry about me.” you assured them as you flushed them a smile.

Yuri shot Luhan a look, “Yah! What have you done to her? Did you know that she can’t breathe when she smelled the scent of perfume?! Look at her, she look pale.” she hissed but Luhan only glance at you then shrugged.

“Don’t blame him. He doesn’t know that I hate perfumes..” you snapped Yuri. She gaze at you, “Sooyoung-ah..” You smiled, “I’m perfectly fine. I appreciate your worry..” you said. Yuri finally nodded, satisfied.

You then turned to Luhan, “Let’s continued our session tomorrow. I want to rest today.”



you said and get off the bed carefully.

Yoona helped you walk as Seohyun helped you with your bag. Yuri spotted your phone on Luhan's hand. She grabbed it and with one last glare, she walked off following you, Yoona and Seohyun from behind.

Luhan gaze at your back, \*She defended me? She told them that I didn't know about her hating perfumes but we both know that I do..\*

## CHAPTER 18

Another day fast came again. As the usual routine, you woke up to prepare yourself for school and so did your friends.

After the incident yesterday, you didn't bring up that topic again. About your ex-boyfriend or even about your hypersensitivity. Yuri already apologized to you as you warmly forgive her.

And with that, you headed to your class with Yoona as Yuri and Seohyun got separated on the way to their classes.

On the other hand, Luhan was busy fixing his uniform as Kris suddenly appeared. "You weren't wearing any perfume on?" he asked, surprised.

Luhan simply shook his head, "Ani." Kris raised an eyebrow, "That's new." he commented. Luhan stared at Kris for a moment before rolling his eyes

on his roommate.

Luhan shrugged, "Class was about to start. Let's go before we get late." he snapped and walked away.

Kris tilted his head at his friend's back in wonder. With a shrugged, Kris walked off following Luhan from behind.

EXO-K and EXO-M meet up outside the dorm before walking together ahead their classes.

"Look, EXO is coming!" "Yeah! I see. Wait, did you heard the rumor about Luhan?" "Ani. I actually saw it." "Really?" "Yeah! I saw him carrying a girl yesterday. Unluckily, I didn't saw her face." "Woah! That was the first time in the history that Luhan caught with a girl. How lucky she is." a conversation of the two girls could be heard as EXO passed by them.

EXO except Luhan furrowed their eyebrows together in wonder upon hearing the rumor.

Sehun turned to Luhan who was walking beside him, "You're with a girl yesterday?" he asked as EXO focused their eyes at Luhan, waiting for an answer.

All Luhan did was shrugged and said, "Rumor is just a rumor. Don't believe them." he then walk passed by his friends. EXO glance at each other. "Well.. that rumor is impossible to happen though.." Lay said. The others nodded in agreement. With that, they followed.

---

Inside the class, you were sitting at your seat next to Yoona while waiting for your teacher to

come.

Just then you heard one of your classmates said, "I heard Luhan caught with a girl yesterday. Is it true?" You suddenly gulped upon hearing it. Then another classmate of yours replied to it, "I think it's not true. It's impossible for Luhan to be with a girl."

You let out a heavy sigh, \*Yeah! Just believe that..\* Yoona glance at you worriedly, "Are you alright?" she asked, whispering. You turned to her and nodded, "I'm fine. They won't believe about that rumor for sure. It's impossible for them to believe that anyways.." you whispered back and gave her an assuring smile.

Satisfied, Yoona smiled and nodded in understanding. Moments later, the teacher finally arrived at the classroom and starts the lesson.

Time passed by quickly, now it's time for lunch. As your usually routine, you eat lunch together with your 3 friends.

Once you sat on your place at the canteen. You started your food and so did your friends. Across your table was EXO's table.

Luhan keep glancing at your way as if he's worrying about something. You felt his stares so you decided to lower your head while eating, not wanting to met his cold and scary eyes.

Just then, Yuri elbowed you. "Sooyoung look, Luhan keeps glancing at you." she whispered. You shrugged, "He's not. Now, eat." you hissed.

Yuri rolled her eyes but then giggled. You shot her a look, "What?" you asked, annoyed. "I just want to remind you. You can't fall in love with him." she reminded.

"Mwo? Who said I am?" you hissed. "No one. Just wanted to remind you." she said. You rolled your eyes, "Whatever!" just then, your eyes landed on their way. Luckily, Luhan was already busy eating his food.

With a sigh, you also continued your food. "Disappointed?" Seohyun snapped. You looked up, "Mwo?"

"Looks like you're disappointed by something." Seohyun said. Yuri turned to you then gaze at Luhan's way. She smiled then grinned, "Yeah! Because his target isn't looking at her anymore." she teased.

"Shut up and eat." you said and went back on your food. Your frowned, \*Me? Disappointed? Impossible..\* you shook that thought away then focus on your food again until the lunch break ended.

---

Class ended. As always, you went separated way from your friends and made your way to the 5th floor to meet up with Luhan.

Reaching classroom 512, you glance down at your wrist-watch and it says 6:15pm. You were already 15 minutes late. You took a deep breath before carefully opening the door.

There he was, sitting at the front seat. He was looking at your way with his hands on both of

his pockets. You slowly stepped inside and closed the door before locking it.

You started walking towards the teacher's place which is in front near the board when you heard Luhan spoke, "Are you alright?" he asked that made you stopped on your tracks.

Surprised, you slowly turned to him and tilted your head, "Eh?" you gasped. Luhan cleared his throat, "Nothing." he replied with a calm voice.

You made a face, "Psh!" then you sat on the teacher's table as you usually do when you attended session for Luhan.

"So.." Luhan started that made you focus on him. "About my assignment.." he trailed off.

"Oh! About that, no need to bother anymore. You already did it great." you said. Luhan tilted his head to you in confusion.

But then you continued, "About the incident yesterday, thanks for bringing me at the clinic. I think you're starting to care about the others." you said.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, "I just did it because it's my fault." he defended. "Exactly! You even admitted your fault. You're started to be warm to others. Good job!" you said, smiling and gave him a thumbs up.

Luhan froze, \*Her smiles.. Why am I feeling the time stop just now?\*

"Luhan? Are you listening?" you said, leaning closer to him as you waved your hand in front of his face. Luhan snapped out

his thought and stared at you.

Just then, he realized how close you are to him. He back off as he lightly moved his chair backward, "What you were saying?" he asked, not looking at you straightly in the eyes.

You leaned back and shrugged, "As I was saying. Let's not do a session for today. Since you did a great job on your first assignment, I'll give you a break for today. Plus, I want to have a rest for at least a day." you said with a sigh.

Luhan stared at you, studying your face. "About what happened yesterday, I just forgot about you hating perfumes.." he said.

"Just say sorry if you want to apologize." you snapped. Luhan stared at you in disbelief then shrugged, "I'm not apologizing. I'm just explaining. I didn't did it on purpose anyways.." he snapped back.

You made a face but the smiled, "No worries. I'm perfectly fine now anyways. And I can see that you're not wearing perfume anymore. I can't smell any scent of perfume from you now." you said.

Luhan rolled his eyes. "Umm.. By the way, I heard that some students saw us yesterday.." you trailed off. Luhan sighed, "Lucky for you, they didn't saw your face." he said.

You nodded, "Yeah! I'm still lucky.." you whispered. "Umm.. May I ask you something?" you asked.

"Go on." he said. "Why weren't you wearing a perfume today?"

Were you worried about me to faint again?" you spit out.

There was a pause then you saw him shrugged, "Why should I? I'm just worried about myself to blame by your friends." he excused. You just stared at him, not believing him.

"I don't believe you. You just ask me as I enter this room if I'm alright so I think you're worried about me." you said.

\*So she heard my question earlier?\* but Luhan shrugged, "Think of that if you want. I'm leaving now." he said as he stood up and walked off.

You watched his back, \*He's back by being a monster-jerk again.\* you couldn't help but chuckled because of his rude act.

## CHAPTER 19

Your eyes slowly open as the sun rays hit your face. It's now time to get ready for school. As for the daily routine, you take a bath and ate breakfast with your friends. After that, all of you headed to your classes.

As for Luhan, he woke up early so Kris don't need to wake him up and get a kick from him. Like Luhan did yesterday, he didn't wear any perfume just to make sure that your hypersensitivity won't attack anymore.

Kris was confused on his roommate's sudden changed of action. He raised an eyebrow and asked, "No perfume again?"

Luhan turned to him, "Eh?" Kris nodded on Luhan's uniform, "You didn't wear any perfume today. That's really new. I thought you like perfumes." he stated.

Luhan, "I just don't feel like to wear perfume today." Kris look at him suspiciously, "Oh really? How come you didn't wear any perfume yesterday too?" he snapped.

Luhan made a pause but then replied, "Just quit asking and let's go." with that said, he left Kris behind. Kris watched Luhan for a moment before he decided to follow.

---

"Hyung, you didn't wear perfume again today?" Sehun suddenly asked as EXO started walking to their classes. Confused, the others stared at his direction also.

Kris was the one who's looking at him with suspicious eyes. Luhan shrugged, "I just don't feel like wearing any perfume." he replied the same words that he replied to Kris earlier.

Kris rolled his eyes, "Don't ask him. He will just give us a invalid response." he said and started to walk. "Wait hyung!" Tao followed.

The others nodded then also followed Kris and Tao. Sehun patted Luhan's shoulder. Luhan looked up and nodded. With that, HunHan followed.

---

The 3rd class fatly came. Luhan entered the classroom for the

English subject which is his hate subject. No one in EXO have the same class as him so he boringly dragged himself inside the classroom alone.

Moments later, the teacher came in. "Mr. Lu." she called. Luhan looked up by the sudden call. "Come here. I have something important to say to you." the teacher said.

Despite of Luhan didn't want to go in front, he can't because his parents will surely know about this. Without a choice, Luhan slowly stood up and walked in front.

"Your parents called me just now." the teacher started. Luhan frowned, "What did they say?" he asked in annoyed tone upon hearing his parents from the teacher's mouth.

"They wanted to transfer you to another English class. They wanted you to attend the high class." the teacher stated. Luhan stared at the teacher in disbelief, "Mwo?" he gasped, shocked.

"Don't worry. You only need to attend high class when it's time for your English class. Your parents are worried about you on this subject. They know that you're weak in English. So, get ready. I'll send you to your new class." the teacher said.

Luhan wanted to argue with the teacher but he already know what will going to happen if he did. However, he grabbed his bag and followed the teacher on the way to his new English class.

Minutes later, they finally arrived. The teacher told to her co-teacher about Luhan's

condition. With that, the new teacher welcomed Luhan inside the classroom.

“Kindly introduce yourself please..” the teacher said as Luhan went inside the classroom. With a sigh, Luhan walked at the center then introduced.

“Annyeong! Lu Han-immnida.. I’ll be the new student in this class.” he said with no emotion.

---

You were busy staring at the window when your teacher went outside because of the new student for the English class that you were attending.

“Kindly introduce yourself please..” you heard your teacher said. You didn’t even care to look in front and just keep staring at the scenery outside the window.

“Annyeong! Lu Han-immnida.. I’ll be the new student in this class.” you suddenly heard a familiar voice introduced. You quickly turned in front and saw the no other than Luhan, the monster-jerk.

Your eyes widen upon seeing your new classmate’s face. “Okay, Mr. Lu please take the vacant seat next to Ms. Han Sooyoung.” the teacher announced.

You stared at your teacher in disbelief. While Luhan was surprised to hear your name. He looked around to search for you but then the teacher gestured your way.

Locking eyes with each other, Luhan headed to his seat next to

you. As Luhan sat, you keep on staring at him, still in shocked.

Luhan gave you a death glare look as he noticed the other students staring at his direction. You quickly looked away upon seeing his monster looks.

“Everyone. Let’s start our discussion now.” the teacher announced as she started the topic for the lesson.

\*Why is he here in our class?\*

was the thought that keep crossing on your mind. Just then, you felt your phone vibrated. You pulled it out and read it.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Pretend that we don’t know each other.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

You glance at him but he motioned you to face the front. With a sigh, you faced the front and focus on the class.

---

*Kriiiiing! Kriiiiing!*

The bell finally rang for lunch time. You keep all your things and turned to go but you accidentally met eyes with Luhan. He ignored you and walked off first.

You made a face but then went out. You found your friends outside with wide eyes upon seeing Luhan exited your classroom.

“Sooyoung-ah, isn’t that Luhan?” Seohyun asked. You boredly nodded. “Why did he

came out from your classroom then?” Yoona asked.

“He’s my new classmate in English subject.” you simply replied. “Mwo? But this English class is for the top students only. Even Kris didn’t accept here. How come Luhan did?” Yuri asked. You shook your head, “Molla.”

“Maybe his parents did. Remember, his parents have half shares in this school?” Yoona snapped. “Yeah, you’re right.” you said.

“Come on, let’s just eat.” Seohyun snapped as all of you nodded in agreement then headed to the canteen.

---

Hours had already passed. The classes finally ended. As always, Luhan excused himself that he will be late again for the practice with EXO.

EXO started to be suspicious by Luhan’s action. “He’s weird nowadays..” Lay commented. “Right. Why don’t we follow him?” Kris suggested. “You mean stalking?” Suho snapped.

Kris rolled his eyes, “If you guys didn’t like my idea, okay I’ll just go by myself.” he said and started to follow Luhan. “I’ll go with you hyung!” Tao said as he followed.

“I want to know about Luhan’s secret too.” Chen said then followed. Lay and Xiumin nodded in agreement as they followed.

“Hyung, we shouldn’t do this to Luhan hyung.” Sehun said to Suho. Suho paused but then

said, "I think I want to know about that too." with that said, he followed EXO-M. Kai also agreed to it.

Soon, Baekhyun, Chanyeol and D.O. agreed also. No choice, Sehun also followed his hyungs.

Luhan used the elevator on going up. Kris stared at the screen on what floor should Luhan going to. '5th floor' it says.

"What? That high?" Xiumin gasped in disbelief. "I think we need to use the other elevator. Come on guys." Kris said as the others followed him from behind.

"Sorry sir but you can't use the elevator at this time." the operator said. "I'll call Luhan to fire you then." Kris threatened. As he was about to dial, the operator stopped him. "Get inside now."

Kris smiled, "Good." with that, EXO went inside the elevator and went up to 5th floor. As the elevator slid open, they stepped out and saw Luhan entered a classroom. Luckily, Luhan didn't notice it.

They decided to follow Luhan inside the classroom but then stopped halfway. "Hold up and hide." Kris ordered as he saw you hurriedly entered the same classroom that Luhan entered.

EXO were hiding on a good spot until the classroom finally click closed. Kris stepped out from his hiding place. "Who's that girl?" Baekhyun asked. "Luhan's girl?" Chanyeol snapped.

"That's impossible. Luhan

hyung don't like girls." Sehun snapped. "Who knows?" Kai suddenly said.

"Let's go and check then." Kris said as all nodded in agreement tgen headed towards the classroom.

---

"Am I late?" you asked Luhan as you closed and locked the door panting. Luhan shook his head, "You just came in time." he said.

You let out a sigh, "Okay, let's start." you said and headed to the teacher's table.

As you was about to start the session, both you and Luhan suddenly heard someone trying to open the door. You glance at Luhan in panic, "Eoteokhae?" you whispered.

Just then, you heard voices behind the door, "Hyung, it's locked." "Omo! Did they?" "Yah! Stop thinking nonsense." "Luhan, are you there?" that was Suho's voice as the other voices coming from the other EXO members.

Luhan stared at the door in disbelief, "What are they doing here?" "Who's that? They know you.." you whispered. Luhan turned to you, "Hide." he whispered back.

"Mwo?" you whispered. "Just hide here. Palli!" Luhan said as he pushed you under the teacher's table. Without a choice, you obeyed him.

Luhan took a deep breath before approaching the door. EXO scanned the classroom and saw no sight of a girl. "What are you

guys doing here?" Luhan asked.

"Just wanna check where you always going during our practices. What exactly you're doing here in this classroom?" Lay asked.

Luhan shrugged, "I just want to be alone for a while before attending our practices. That's all." he quickly replied.

Kris raised an eyebrow, "Oh really? That's all?" Luhan raised an eyebrow also, "Yeah, that's all really. So guys, can you please leave for a moment. I'll attend our practiced later." Luhan said, trying his best to shoo them away.

"I told you, hyung has no secret. Come on, let's just give him time to be alone." Sehun snapped. \*Yeah.. Sehun, convince them to leave..\* Luhan thought.

"Yeah! I think Sehun was right. Let's just leave." Suho said. EXO was about to leave when Kris suddenly spoke, "Hold on. I think I already saw his secret."

EXO stopped and turned to Kris. Luhan stared at Kris in horror. Kris smirked and started walking to the teacher's flatform.

Your eyes widen in horror as you heard the footsteps coming nearer and nearer to you. \*Omo! Don't let them see me..\* you hoped.

Kris finally stopped in front of the teacher's table. You could see his legs just in front of your eyes. Your heart started to beats faster in panic.

Just then, Kris easily lifted the



teacher's table and placed it aside, revealing your figure. "Mind explaining what this girl is doing here with you?" Kris said as he crossed his arms across his chest and narrowed his eyes to Luhan.

Both you and Luhan gasped in disbelief.

## CHAPTER 20

-----  
-----  
--

### **Author's Note**

**Bold font** - speaking in mandarin

*Italic font* - speaking in english

-----  
-----  
--

"Mind explaining what this girl is doing here with you?" Kris question echoed inside the classroom that made both you and Luhan gasped in disbelief.

"Omo! You have a girl with you here?" Suho gasped. "Hyung, who's she?" Sehun asked.

You slowly stood up as you looked at Luhan with worried eyes. Then Luhan cleared his throat, "Hmm.. She's my bestfriend." he blurted out.

You stared at Luhan with wide eyes upon hearing his reply and so did EXO. "Bestfriend?!" they gasped. "I thought I'm your bestfriend?" Sehun snapped and pouted.

You study Sehun for a moment, \*He's really close to Luhan eh? But he's lovely compare to this monster-jerk!\*

"Uh-oh.. She's my girl bestfriend and you're my boy bestfriend." Luhan explained. Sehun's mouth formed a small 'o' as he nodded his head along.

Still not convinced, Kris turned at you. "Oh really? Girl bestfriend?" he asked, sarcastically. You bit your bottom lip upon seeing Kris' stare.

Kris started to walk closer to you as the scent of his perfume coming nearer and nearer to your nose. At that time, your face started to become pale. You glance at Luhan weakly.

Luhan already got your hint as he immediately rushed to you. He blocked Kris way as he stepped in front of you so you're now behind him. Kris raised an eyebrow. "She hates perfume. She will going to faint anytime if you keep coming closer to her." Luhan snapped.

Kris taken a back but then smirked, "Now, I understand why you didn't wears perfume recently.." he muttered. EXO also thought about that. Now, they understand the reason why.

"Now that you guys know the thruth why I keep being late on our practice, can you leave us alone now?" Luhan suddenly spit out. Kris crossed his arms across his chest, "Sorry but I'm still not convince." he stated.

Your eyes widen in horror, \*Aigoo! This guy is really smart!\* you thought. Luhan frowned, "What?" he asked in annoyance.

"How come you have a girl bestfriend? Everyone thought you don't want any girl near to you except your mom." Kris snapped. Luhan made a pause but then replied, "Yes I do but Sooyoung isn't one to them. Like omma, she's the other girl I want to be near me.." he stated.

Your heart skipped a bit upon hearing his statement. You was very surprised by Luhan's sudden statement. For some reason, you felt happy by his words.

"Woah!" you could hear the others gasped in amusement. Even Kris did amused. "But I'm still not convince though.." he snapped.

You frowned, \*He's really observant..\* Luhan frowned also, "What again?" he asked, pissed.

Kris chuckled, "Atleast give us a proof like what did she hate the most." he said. "You already witnessed it. She hates perfume so much that she can't breath if it get near to her." Luhan replied. Kris turned to you, "How about you Miss? Did ypu know what Luhan hate the most?" he asked. "Umm.. Girls?" you said.

EXO burst into laughter upon hearing your reply, earning a glare from Luhan. You made a face, "I was just saying the truth." you mumbled.

"Except for that?" Kris spoke. "Eh?!" you gasped. Kris shrugged, "Everyone knows about that so give us another proof."

You gulped, \*Aigoo! When will this guy going to stop of his questions?\* you made a pause

before answering, "He's allergic to seafoods." you blurted out.

EXO stared at you in surprise and so did Luhan. Only EXO and Luhan's relative knew about this because he wanted to keep it a secret. Luhan was very shocked that you knew about this.

"Hyung, are you still not convinced?" Tao snapped. Kris cleared his throat, "Fine. I'm convinced!" he finally said. You sighed in relief.

Luhan still, his gaze didn't leave you. You started to feel uneasy behind him so you stepped away a little bit from him.

"Okay! But atleast introduce your girl bestfriend to us." Kris said as the others nodded in agreement. Luhan finally broke his gaze from you and faced his friends.

"U-oh.. Yeah! She's Han Sooyoung. One of the scholars here at school. My bestfriend." Luhan introduced you.

"She's scholar? Wow! You must be smart." Lay stated as he walked towards you and so did the others. "Wait! Did your parents know about her?" Chen suddenly asked. You gulped and looked at Luhan. Luhan shrugged, "Ani and I don't want them to know."

"Mwo? But you should!" Xiumin snapped. Luhan shrugged once again, "I already said I don't want to." he snapped.

"How about her?" Xiumin nodded on your way, "Did you even think if she wanted to?" he snapped. You immediately waved your hand with a shook of head, "Ani. It's okay. I don't

want anyone to know our relationship as bestfriends that's why we're hiding it to everyone including you guys." you snapped.

EXO gaze at you. You elbowed Luhan, "Right hmm?" you faked a smile. "Uh-oh.. Yeah!" Luhan nodded.

Xiumin frowned, "If you say so but soon everyone will know about this so you should reveal it to everyone now." he snapped.

"I will. Soon.." Luhan said. You looked at him, worried but he ignored you. "Don't you guys going to introduce yourselves to her?" he snapped.

"Uh-oh.. Yeah.. I'll start first. Annyeong haseyo! Baekhyun-imnida.. Nice to meet you." he said with a waves of hand. You lightly bowed, "Same here.."

"Annyeong! Chanyeol-imnida!" he introduced with a wide smile on his face. You couldn't help but smiled back.

"**Ni hao!** Lay-imnida.." he said with a smile that made his dimple appeared on his right cheek. \*Cute dimple you got there!\* you smiled back and nodded.

"**Ni hao!** Tao-imnida." he introduced with a warm smile. \*Woah! He's really not scary. He's kind actually.. The way he speak..\* you thought as you smiled back at him.

"Annyeong haseyo! Suho-imnida." a boy said as he flushed you his angelic smile. \*Is he an angel?\*" you thought then smiled.

"**Ni hao!** Chen-imnida.." he said as he waved. "**Ni hao!** Xiumin-imnida!" a chubby face

introduced with full of energy. You chuckled, "**Ni hao!**"

Kai waved, "Kai-imnida!" he said with seductive tone. You gulped, \*Aigoo! This boy is something..\* you thought.

"Annyeong noona! Sehun-imnida. Can I call you noona?" he asked. You stared at him seriously, "But you already did." you snapped. "Uh-oh.." Sehun rubbed the back of his neck. You chuckled, "No worries, you can freely call me noona." you spit out. Sehun's eyes rounded as he beamed in happiness.

Luhan stared at his dongsaeng's reaction but then shook his head.

"Annyeong haseyo! Kyungsoo-imnida but you can call me D.O. I more prefer to be called by that name than my real name." he said. You nodded, "Okay, D.O.." you smiled.

And last but not the least, Kris introduced himself. "*Wazzup! My name is Wu Fan but call me Kris. It's nice meeting you.*" You smiled, "*Yeah! Same here, nice to meet you.*" you replied.

The others including Luhan stared at the both of you in puzzlement, completely doesn't understand the conversation. "We're just introducing ourselves to each other." Kris stated. EXO nodded in understanding.

"Hyung, why don't we invite her to watch our practice today?" Sehun suggested as the others nodded in agreement.

Before Luhan could protest, Sehun already dragged you towards their practice room downstairs as the others followed. Luhan sighed, annoyed. Kris spoke, "There's a

part of me that keeps saying to not believe the two of you, you know.." with that said, he followed the others.

Luhan left there, dumbfounded. He watched Kris walked away, \*What's that suppose to be mean? Does he mean he's still not convinced? Aish! That's why I hate him. He's so observant and smart!\* he run his hand to his hair in frustration but then followed.

---

EXO started practicing separately as you make yourself comfortable on your seat and watched them with rounded eyes.

\*Woah! They were only practicing right? But so cool! I can't believe I just saw them dance today..\* you thought. This is the very first time seeing them dancing. You can't help it but watched them like they were idol group. Honestly, they really look like one of them.

You glance at Luhan. At this point, he looks like a different person. You could see that he was enjoying what he was doing right now. A smile formed on your face upon seeing the other side of him.

After an hour, the practice ended. You clapped at them, still amused. "How was it?" Kai asked. "Daebak!" you beamed. EXO except Luhan smiled at you, thankful.

"It's getting late now. I should go now." you suddenly said as noticed the time. They nodded in understanding. "Okay, Luhan go and walked her to their dorm." Kris ordered.

Luhan stared at his leader in shock, "Mwo?! Why me?" he gasped as your eyes widen upon hearing Kris' words.

Kris raised an eyebrow to Luhan, "Wae? She's your bestfriend so you're the one should walk her there." he snapped. You waved your hand, "Ani, it's okay. I can—" your words suddenly cut off halfway because of Luhan.

"Okay. I'll walk her on the way to their dorm." he said. "Eh?!" you gasped. "Kaja!" Luhan said as he walk passed by you. You made a face then waved goodbye to the others before following Luhan.

---

Silence filled the atmosphere on the way to the dorm. "You know.." you started, breaking the silence.

"You shouldn't agree to walk with me. I can walk by myself." you continued. "It's okay I have something to ask you anyways.." he said.

You frowned, "What is it?" you asked, eyes still focusing on your way. There was a long pause before Luhan spit out his question,

"How did you know that I'm allergic to seafoods?"

"How did you know that I'm allergic to seafoods?" Luhan suddenly asked. You made a pause then turned to face him. You open your mouth to give him a reply but nothing came out.

"I told her." a sudden voice snapped the conversation. Both you and Luhan turned to direction of the voice and saw Yuri walking towards the both of you.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, "You are?" Yuri frowned, "Don't you remember me? I'm one of Sooyoung's friend." she replied with rolling eyes.

"Yuri.." you whispered. Luhan give Yuri a look, "Wait! How did you know about me being allergic to seafoods, by the way?" he asked with his arms cross to his chest.

"Hmmm.. Let's just say I knew a lot about EXO?" she replied with a questioning tone. Luhan raised an eyebrow, "What are you? A stalker?" he snapped.

"Ani, I'm not! I'm a fan, okay.." Yuri snapped. Luhan turned to you with a frown. "Uh-oh.. She's not lying! She is really a fan." you snapped.

Still not believing, Luhan raised an eyebrow to you. "Aigoo! It's already dark now. You should go back now. Thanks for walking me here." you turned to Yuri, "Kaja!" with that said, you quickly dragged Yuri along with you. Leaving Luhan, dumbfounded.

Luhan watched your back in annoyance. He doesn't like the others know about his weakness

## CHAPTER 21

about seafoods but you already did.

Right at this moment, a thought suddenly came up to Luhan's mind. \*I'm being suspicious about her.. First, she offered me a help to fall in love and this time, she also knows my weakness. Now, I'm curious why she wanted to help me..\*

With a shook of head, Luhan walked back to their dorm. Absentminded, Luhan accidentally entered the EXO-K's dorm.

"Uh-oh.. Luhan hyung, what are you doing here?" Sehun suddenly asked as he saw Luhan. The other members stared at him in confusion.

\*Huh?\* Luhan slowly gaze at them, "What are you guys doing here?" he asked. Baekhyun raised an eyebrow, "It's our dorm. Of course, we'll be here." he snapped. Luhan looked around.

"EXO-M's dorm was on the next door, Luhan." Suho spoke. "Uh-oh.. Mian." with that said, Luhan left.

EXO-K stared at the closed door in surprise. "Did you guys hear that?" Chanyeol gaped. "Yeah. He just said sorry.. That's the first time he apologized." Kai added.

"He's really weird today.." D.O. said. "Maybe because of what happen earlier." Suho said. "Maybe.."

Still absentminded, Luhan entered the right dorm. EXO-M watched him entering their dorm as they were sitting on the couch. Luhan didn't even budge

to look at them and just continued walking.

Before Luhan could completely enter his and Kris' room, Lay called him. "Luhan!" It made him startled a bit as he slowly turned to his co-members' direction.

EXO-M crossed their arms across their chests and narrowed their eyes to Luhan. "Now, explain what's really going on." Kris said.

"I already told you guys everything. Now, let me take a rest." with that statement, Luhan darted inside his room and shut the door closed.

EXO-M glanced at each other with a frown. "He's acting weird nowadays.." Chen stated. "You just realize it now?" Xiumin snapped with rolling eyes. Chen pouted.

"Let's just talk about this tomorrow. We need to take a rest too." Kris said. Tao nodded, "Yeah.. We still need to attend school too." he added.

With that, EXO-M headed to their respective rooms.

---

"MWO?!" that was the reaction of your 3 friends after you told them everything that happened. You pressed one finger on your lips, "Sshhh! Don't be too loud. The other girls on the dorm next to us must be sleeping now." you whispered.

"But wait! EXO caught both you and Luhan?" Seohyun whispered. You nodded, "Yeah!" "What's their reaction then?" Yoona asked. "Of course,

they're all shocked. Luckily, Luhan already make an excuse but I don't like that idea though.." you replied.

"Excuse? What kind of excuse is it?" Yuri asked. "He told them that I'm his bestfriend." you said.

"Bestfriend?" they gasped in unison. "Sshhhhh! Lower your voice guys.." you snapped. "But.. Did they believe that?" Yuri asked.

"At first, they didn't. But when I told them that I know about Luhan being allergic to seafoods, they all surprised by it that made them believed it." you said.

"Ohh.. So this is why Luhan asking you about this earlier?" Yuri asked. You simply nodded. "Wait! What are you doing outside, by the way?" you asked.

"Uh-oh.. We're just wondering why you still not back so I decided to check up on you but then I saw you and Luhan together as I accidentally heard your conversation with him.." she explained.

You nodded in understanding. "About that, what take you so long to come back here, by the way?" Seohyun snapped. You paused before replying, "Because EXO invited me to watch their practice. It's hard to say 'no' to them so I agreed."

You could see the surprise expression on your 3 friends faces. "Really? Woah! You're so lucky! I've been wanting to watch them practicing but then you did and they also offered it. Aigoo! I'm envious of you.." Yuri stated.

You rolled your eyes, “Don’t be like that. I bet this bestfriend thingy will lead my life in danger.” you said.

Yoona nodded, “Yeah. You must be careful from now on. You’ll be safe for now since no one knew about this except for the 3 of us and EXO. All you need to do is wish that no one will find out about this.” she said.

You let out a sigh, “I know. How I wish I won’t meet EXO anymore or I’ll be dead in no time.” you said. They nodded in agreement.

---

Another day came again. For the daily routine, both you and Luhan prepared yourselves for school separately.

“Come on, Sooyoung-ah!” Seohyun called. “Coming!” you replied as you run to your friends.

As the 3 of you were walking towards the corridor, a familiar group of boys popped on your sight. They were walking to the opposite direction. Anytime, you will passed by them. It was the famous group of boys at your school, EXO.

The bad thing is, there are lot of students around. Just a little interaction between you and EXO will probably get their attentions.

Everything started to move in slow motion. You suddenly stopped as your friends also did. They glance at you and followed your gaze. Then they noticed that EXO is coming nearer and

nearer.

“You guys go ahead first. I need to hide before something unexpected will happened here.” you told them and spun around.

As you was about to escape, Sehun’s voice echoed through the corridor as he shouted your name. “Sooyoung noona!”

Right on your spot, you froze.

## CHAPTER 22

“Sooyoung noona!”

Murmurs can be heard from the students at the corridor. Some gasped and some froze. It was the first, first time Sehun called someone a ‘noona’ at the school.

Luhan on the other hand, have his eyes wide. He was too shocked by his dongsaeng’s sudden called. Kris glance at him and smirked. Luhan gulped upon seeing it, \*Damn you Wu Fan!\*

“Sooyoung noona!” for the second time, Sehun called you once again. You face-palmed yourself before slowly turning to face them.

Your 3 friends were staring at you, worried. They want to help you but they don’t know how.

Slowly, Sehun approach you. Kris also followed. Soon enough, the others also did. Luhan left behind. He watched his friends approach you in disbelief.

“Aigoo! Who is Sehun calling noona?” “He called Sooyoung, right?” “Wait! Sooyoung? You mean the scholar Sooyoung?” “Yeah! I think she is. Look, they’re going to approach her now.” you heard the girls around said.

You bit your bottom lip as you saw EXO was already in front of you. “Good morning Luhan’s bestfriend.” Kris greeted, loud enough for all the students at the corridor hear it.

The students started to form another murmurs again. They turned to Luhan’s direction and started whispering to each other.

You stared at Kris in disbelief. Still, Luhan never leave his spot. He was still standing a bit far from you. You face-palmed yourself, \*Aish! What’s with that monster-jerk! Isn’t he see that I need help here?!\*

Moments later, Luhan approached his Kris. “Class will start soon. She must be going on her class now. Come on, we also have our own classes right?” he snapped.

You nodded in agreement, \*Right! Right!\*

 you replied on your mind. Kris nodded, “Okay, see you at lunch then, Luhan’s bestfriend.” he said, emphasizing the last two words.

You bit your bottom lip, \*What’s with this guy! Is he still suspicious about my relationship with Luhan? Aigoo!\*

“Annyeong noona! I hope we can have a talk next time.” Sehun waved a goodbye before EXO completely left. You sighed in relief but then suddenly noticed many stares



from the students at the corridor.

Your eyes widen in fear. “Seohyun, Yuri, Yoona, come on and run! Palli!” you shouted and started to run. Your friends glance at you for a moment before running after you.

The 4 of you got separated as all of you went to your respective classes, you with Yoona. To your luck, the teacher came early so no one can try to bother you at this moment.

Time fastly passed by. It was already time for the 3rd class. The worst is, Luhan was in the same class as you.

You took a deep breath before carefully entering the classroom for your English class. Surprisingly, Luhan was already there, sitting on the chair next to yours.

With another deep breathing, you dragged your foot towards your place. You carefully sat on your seat.

Right after you sit, the students around the classroom gaze at the two of you. Whispering can be heard inside the classroom. Bit by bit, their whispers started to be loud that you almost heard what they’re talking about and of course, it’s all about you and Luhan.

Annoyed, Luhan couldn’t take it anymore as he grabbed your wrist and started dragging you along with him outside the classroom.

Surprised, the students at your English class stopped their business and stared at the two of you with wide eyes.

---

“Yah! Where are you taking me?” you asked Luhan as he kept dragging you somewhere with a serious expression on his face. Students that the two of you passed by have their jaws dropped because of what they saw.

“Luhan..” you whispered as you felt their stares didn’t leave you two. Luhan ignored you and tightened his grip on you.

“Luhan, you’re hurting me.” you mumbled as you felt a pain on your wrist. Still, Luhan continued dragging you without a word but his grip loosen a bit.

Minutes later, both you and Luhan reach the rooftop of the building. With that, Luhan finally released your wrist from his grip.

You gently rubbed your red wrist with a frown on your face. Luhan looked down on your wrist. His expression softened, “Mian.. I didn’t mean to hurt you.” he mumbled.

Your hand stopped rubbing your wrist as you heard him said those words. You lifted your head up to look at him, “Wait! Am I hearing things right? Did you just apologize to me?” you asked in a bit teasing tone.

Luhan shot you a look then rolled his eyes. He then make himself sat. With a chuckle, you followed him and sat next to him.

You then continued rubbing your wrist. “Is it hurting that much?” you heard him asked. You paused but then shook your head, “Ani, just a little bit.” you

replied with a smile, assuring him.

Luhan froze when he saw your smile. He quickly looked away and cleared his throat. “Why did you drag me here all of a sudden, by the way?” you asked.

“I’m getting pissed because of the students around us. I know they were talking about us. It’s getting on my nerves.” he replied.

“Psh! You shouldn’t drag me along. If you’re pissed, you can just leave the classroom without me. You just let us in with a big trouble because of what you did, you know.” you snapped. Luhan was stunned, \*She’s right! But why did I drag her along with me?\*

“See? You can’t say a word because I’m right.” you said as your gaze suddenly landed on your wrist-watch.

Your eyes widen in horror, “Omo! We’re almost 15 minutes late. Aigoo! I should go now!” you told him and quickly stood up.

Just when you stepped one feet forward, a hand suddenly grabbed your hand. Yes, he held your hand and not your wrist.

It was Luhan. You turned to him and raised an eyebrow. There was a pause before you heard him said,

“Stay..”

## CHAPTER 23

“Stay..” that was you heard Luhan said to you. That was really unexpected. Your gaze went down to your hand that he was holding.

Luhan realized what he did and slowly released your hand as he looked away. “Uh-oh.. Your wrist was hurt so I held your hand instead..” he explained. You frowned and just stared at him without saying a word.

Luhan looked up, “Just stay..” he said once again. Before you could respond, he continued. “If you go back there, they will definitely bash you so I think it’s better if you stay here.”

You let out a sigh, \*Well.. He’s right.\* you then sat back next to him. “You just realized that now?” you suddenly spoke.

Luhan turned to you with a confused look on his face. “If you didn’t drag me along here, no one will think that we know each other.” you said.

“You’re wrong.” he snapped. You tilted your head to him as he added, “I know my friends. Now that they believing that we’re bestfriends, they will start approaching you from now on.”

“Mwo?” you gasped. Luhan sighed, “Things will be more complicated now.” he stated. You nodded in agreement, “Yeah,” you let out a sigh. “I guess we’ll be staying here for a while.” you whispered.

“Yeah. That will be better for us. No one can bash you if we stay here.” he said. You stared at him. Luhan noticed your stares so he turned to face you, “What are you staring at?” he asked.

You paused then said, “You know what, you’re different today.” Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Different?”

You nodded, “The first time I met you, you were cold and scary towards me but now..” you paused before adding, “..you’re nice to me. You’re even thinking that if I stay here with you, I’m safe. I found it weird..”

Luhan was about to spoke just when you spoke again, “But I think it’s great!” you said as you pressed your palms together.

Luhan frowned. “The cold-hearted Luhan started to change into a warm person now. I feel so proud for myself.” you beamed.

“Mwo? Did you just call me cold-hearted? And what thing could you proud of?” he snapped. “Yes I called you cold-hearted! I’m just saying the truth. And I’m proud because I’m the one who teach you how to be a warm person.” you said.

“Whatever you say.” he said. You rolled your eyes, \*Jerk come back again..\* you thought.

“But you know what Luhan?” you trailed off. Luhan give you a poker face, “What?” he asked, annoyed. “You look better without that poker face, no frowning or raising a voice. I like you when you’re calm.” you said.

Luhan stared at you as his

heartbeat skipped a bit. But then he ignored it and looked away. “I’m better the way I am.” he snapped.

“Exactly what I mean. The way you are. I think you’re not really a cold-hearted person. Now, I’m wondering why I didn’t saw you with a girl.” you said.

Luhan paused. You glance at him, “No need to answer that though..” you said. Luhan cleared his throat and said, “Because I used to be bullied by girls when I was young.”

You gasped upon hearing his statement. “Y-You get bullied?” you asked. With a sigh, Luhan nodded. “To be honest, yes. I don’t know why they keep bullying me and why I didn’t fight back. After that day, I didn’t talk to any girls except omma.” he confessed.

“Then, why are you talking to me right now?” you slowly asked. Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Haven’t I told you already that I don’t think you’re a girl?” he snapped.

You rolled eyes, \*Aish! I hate this monster-jerk seriously!!!\* you screamed on your mind as you did a poker face.

“Honestly,” Luhan started that made you turned to him. He was staring at the scenery in front of the two of you as he continued, “I don’t know why I’m talking to you but there’s a part of me saying that it’s safe when I’m with you..” he finished his sentence as he faced you and flushed you a warm smile.

Your heartbeat skipped for a moment upon seeing his smile. That was the first time you saw

him smiled. He looks different person when he smiled. You just stared at him as your heartbeat started to race in beating.

Just then, the bell rang for the lunch time. Luhan straightened up, "I think we can go back now." he said as he stood up that made you broke your gaze from him. "Uh-oh.."

Luhan started to walk away but then stopped halfway as he realized that you're still sitting on the same spot where he left you.

"Aren't you going now?" he called. "Ani. I'll just stay here. I don't want your friends to see me at the canteen. It will be better if I'm here." you said, not looking at him.

"So, you were saying you're not going to eat lunch?" he asked. You simply shook your head. "Okay then." he replied as you heard his foot steps go far away from you.

You let out a heavy sigh when you didn't heard his foot steps anymore. You run your hand to your chest and flatted your palm on it. "I feel weird inside my chest.." you whispered to yourself.

There's a thought that keeps crossing on your mind. You shook it away, not wanting to believe it. Seeing Luhan's smile makes your legs weak. You admitted, he looks like an angel when a smile forming on his lips.

You let out another heaved sigh, not wanting to remember what just happened earlier. Not wanting to remember Luhan's smile again.

You stayed at the rooftop alone at this moment. There are three reasons why you decided to stay there. First, you don't want EXO to approach you. Second, you don't want to get everyone's attention because what just happened. Lastly, because your heart reacted weird after seeing Luhan's smile.

After couple of minutes, you heard a familiar voice spoke. "I bought you lunch. You must be hungry now.."

## CHAPTER 24

You blinked a couple of times just when you saw Luhan standing right there holding two box food. Your expression was hardly to read that made Luhan frowned.

Luhan started walking towards you as you keep your eyes glued to him without blinking this time. He then sat next to you and handed the box to you. Still, your gaze didn't leave his face.

Luhan raised an eyebrow then waved his hand in front of your face. Finally, your eyes blinked realizing what was going on around you. "Luhan.." you whispered.

Luhan frowned, "Aren't you going to get this? I'm waiting.." he snapped, motioning the box that he was handling to you.

Your gaze went down to the box, "Uh-oh.. Mian." you apologized and took it from him. "Why did you bring me a food?"

you suddenly asked, still gazing at the box you were holding.

Luhan shrugged, "Because you're hungry?" he replied with a questioning tone. You frowned and looked up to face him. Luhan cleared his throat, "I don't want to be blame if you got sick. Because if you are, your friends will definitely blame me for this. It's all my fault anyways.." he explained.

"Omo! I forgot! My friends must be looking for me right now." you gasped and pulled out your phone to call them but then Luhan spoke that made you stopped.

"You don't have to worry about that. I already told them about this." Luhan snapped. You raised an eyebrow, "That fast?" you gasped.

He shrugged then nodded. "How about your friends then?" you asked. "I also told them." he replied.

You titled your head to him, "Seriously? They let you go here? I can't believe they just believe you that fast." you said. Luhan only shrugged.

"What did you exactly told them?" you asked once more. "I just told them that I wanted to spend my time alone with you." he replied.

His words made you stunned. His response was really unexpected. \*What did he mean by that?\* before you could ask him, Luhan spoke again.

"They think that you're my bestfriend so there's no need to explain more to them." Your shoulders fell upon hearing that

statement from his mouth. For some reason, you starting to hate the 'bestfriend' thingy between you two.

"Right." you whispered then open the box on your hands. "You know," you trailed off then continued, "You can just eat with your friends than eating here with me."

Luhan simply open his own box and took a bite before giving you a response. "I want to eat here anyways. It's more peaceful here than the canteen." he said.

You nodded in agreement, "True." you said and took a bite on your food.

At that time, everything went silent. Both you and Luhan focus on the food and eat silently.

"Waaah! I'm full! Thanks for the food." you said. Luhan nodded, "No problem." he replied.

You turned to him and smiled. Luhan frowned as he stared at you. A frown also formed on your face upon seeing his expression, "Wae?" you asked.

"You got something there." he said, pointing at the left corner of your lips. You lowered your head to hide your face from embarrassment, "Aigoo! Where's the tissues?" you mumbled to yourself, searching for the tissues.

Luhan looked around and saw it near to him. He carefully reach it, "Here." he said, raising it.

You don't have a choice but to lift your head up. You was about

to reach the tissues but Luhan already wiped the corner of your lips that made your eyes widen in surprise. You stared at Luhan with wide eyes, freezing on your spot. Everything went silent except the sounds of your beating heart. Luhan on the other hand was focusing on wiping your lips.

"There.. It's clean now." he said then put down the tissues back on it's right place. Still, you didn't move and just stared at him.

*Kriiiiing! Kriiiiing!*

A loud sound of bell made you back into reality again. Luhan looked up, "I think we should go now." he said. You nodded, "Uh-oh.. Yeah."

"You go first. I'll follow afterwards. I don't want anyone spotted us together." he said. You just nodded then left him behind.

You placed your palm on your chest as you observed the race of your heartbeat. It went back to normal again, it's completely calm.

\*Aigoo! Why are you reacted like that towards him?\* you asked your heart as you keep on walking towards your English class' classroom to get your bag that you left there when Luhan dragged you out of it.

Soon, you reach it and quickly get your bag then headed to your next class. Still in thought, you keep on walking not even noticing the people around.

Just then, you accidentally bumped into someone. Your books that you were holding

dropped on the floor because of the sudden bump.

Before you could get it, the person you bumped into already took it for you. "Here.. Watch your way.." the voice said as the person handed the books to you.

Absentminded, you bowed at the person and politely took the book from the person's hand.

"See you later.." you heard the person whispered to your ear before walking away. \*Later?\* you thought as you froze.

You quickly spun around and saw the person's back. It's no other than Luhan. You watched him walked away, dumbfounded until he disappeared from your sight.

Just then, you felt your phone vibrated. You open the message and it came from Luhan.

*to: Sooyoung*

*See you at our session later.*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

A bright smile suddenly formed on your face upon reading his message. You put back your phone on your pocket before entering your next classroom.

For some reason, you couldn't wait for the school class to end.

## CHAPTER 25

*Kriiiiing! Kriiiiing!*

The sound of the bell for the end of the school class finally rang. All the teachers exited the classrooms as they heard it while the other students happily skipped outside their classes.

You keep all your things inside your bag before exited the classroom. You couldn't take off the excitement you were feeling right now, realizing that you're going to see Luhan again.

Just when you stepped out the classroom, 3 girls suddenly blocked your way. You looked up and saw unfamiliar faces. This is the first you saw them because they're not popular or something.

You ignored them and tried to escape but they didn't let you as they blocked your way more secure. You raised an eyebrow, "Look, I didn't know what you guys wanted to me. If there is, just spit it now because I have somewhere important to go to." you said.

The girl at the center smirked, "I bet you're going to meet EXO, am I right?" she asked. \*Yes, I do but only one of them. Luhan.\* "And if so, it's none of your business. Now, can I go now?" you said, sarcastically.

"Woah! Did you hear what she said?" the other girl said. "Mind our own business huh?" the girl at the left said. The centered-girl glared at you, "If it is have to do with EXO, I think that's our business too."

"What do you mean?" you asked. "Everything about EXO, we have to know so tell us now. Who are you to them? Why Sehun called you 'noona' this morning? You're the first one he called like that. And I also heard

that you're Luhan's bestfriend? Is that all true? Are you close to EXO? How come all of these just popped out today? Tell me, did you seduce them?" the girls said.

You clenched your fist together very tight upon hearing the girl said. \*Who are you to judge me like that?\* you bit your bottom lip and was about to take an action when a voice suddenly spoke.

"You have no right to say that to my bestfriend!" You looked up and saw Luhan coldly glaring at the three girls. The girls was also shocked by Luhan's sudden appearance.

Luhan approach the 3 girls, "If I saw the 3 of you talk to her again, I won't let you attend this school anymore. Get it?" he threatened. The 3 girls just nodded.

Luhan then turned to you, "Kaja!" he said and spun around to walk but then you spoke, "Just wait a minute."

Luhan turned back to you. His jaw suddenly dropped when he saw an unexpected scene. The centered-girl was already lying on the floor with a bleeding nose after you give her a smack on the face.

You smirked for the victory, "That's what you got!" was all you said before walking away, "Kaja!" you said to Luhan as he followed.

"Why did you do that?" Luhan quickly asked as he caught you up. You shrugged, "I was really planning to do that before you appeared. She's making me pissed off. And you know what?

Sometimes, your cold attitude did really help." you said and was about to start going upstairs when you heard him spoke.

"Let's use the elevator." he snapped. You turned to him, "Mwo?" you gasped. "Aish! Just follow me." he said and walked towards the elevator. He entered it as you followed.

Soon, the elevator stopped as both you and Luhan stepped out. The two of you headed to the classroom that you two usually use when making a session.

"I think you will frequently started to encounter the same thing that happened earlier. Now that they believed we're bestfriends, you should be careful." Luhan said as he sat on the chair.

You let out a sigh, "I think I need to get use to it from now on. But they also need to get ready for a smack from me too." you said proudly. Luhan stared at you in disbelief then shook his head, "I knew it!"

You raised an eyebrow to him. "I'm right, you're not a girl but a boy." he said. You rolled your eyes, "Whatever! Let's just start our session, shall we?" you snapped.

"Just go on." he said without emotion. \*Aigoo! This jerk is easily changing his mood.\* you thought.

"Okay! Let's start. We're going to do an eye-contact." you stated. Luhan raised an eyebrow, "Eye-contact only?" he said, sarcastically.

You rolled your eyes, "Let's just do this, shall we?" you said.



“Okay.” with that said, Luhan stared at you seriously in the eyes. You gulped upon seeing his stares but you don’t have a choice but to stared back since it’s your own idea anyways.

Everything went silent. Neither you nor Luhan broke the staring contest. Honestly, Luhan’s stares makes you melt on your spot. There is something on your chest that wanted to explode. Luhan was also feeling the same way but he just ignored it and just focus on the session.

“You know what?” Luhan suddenly spoke, still keeping his eyes on yours. You didn’t response and just stared back. “I’m glad that any of them didn’t hurt you.” he added.

You froze upon hearing his statement. “I’m also glad.” you just said, not wanting to think any other things. “You must take care of yourself. What if I’m not there to save you?” he said. There was a pause at that moment. \*Those same words…\*

All of a sudden, tears flow down to your cheeks. Luhan grew panic upon seeing your tears, “Sooyoung, gwenchana? Why are you crying? Don’t tell they really did hurt you?” he asked continuously.

You lowered your head, “Ani. It’s not any of their faults. It’s HIS fault. Mian, but I can’t continue our session today. Let’s just continue this next time. I’m going now.” with that said, you darted outside the classroom while your tears keep falling down from your eyes.

Little did you know, your wallet suddenly dropped on the floor before you could step outside the classroom. Luhan reach for

it. It was already open when he took it. There was a photo of a man there.



Curious, Luhan pulled out the photo from your wallet. Then something caught his eyes, the words written at the back of the photo.

*To my Han Sooyoung,*

*Happy Valentines Day! Please take care of yourself. I don't want to see anyone hurting you. I'm afraid that someday I won't be there by your side to save you. Just always look at this photo before you sleep, okay? I LOVE YOU forever <3*

*Love,*

*Kim Myungsoo*

## CHAPTER 26

Again, you went to the abandon room that you and Myungsoo usually staying at when the two of you wanted to spend more time alone together.

You were sitting on a chair as Myungsoo’s guitar resting on your lap. Your tears didn’t stop on falling from your eyes as you hugged the guitar.

\*It’s been already two years since you leave me here alone without saying a word. Whenever I wanted to erase you in my mind, our memories together kept crossing on my mind. Until now, I can’t believe that you’re no longer with me anymore. I love you Kim Myungsoo, I really do but how about you? Are you still thinking about me?\*

you sobbed and buried your face on the top of the guitar.

Little did you know, Luhan was watching you from the door. \*Aish! What am I doing here?\*

that was a question on his mind but even his own body made his way towards the place where you are.

You continued sobbing, “Myungsoo oppa, I really miss you..” you softly whispered between your sobs.

Luhan was still there, watching you in worry. He pulled out your wallet from his pocket to take a look at the photo of Myungsoo again. \*I don’t know what exactly happen between you and Sooyoung but I can feel that you hurt her so much..\*

Luhan glance at your way. You were continued crying on your spot, hugging the guitar. Luhan stayed still. He wanted to leave but there's a part of him that saying not to do so.

Minutes later, Luhan didn't hear your cries anymore. Still, your head was resting on the guitar while you were hugging it. Luhan carefully entered the room to check up on you.

There you are, already sleeping. Luhan studied your face for a moment when a tear suddenly fall from your closed eyes. Luhan softened and gently wiped it away.

\*I don't know if I'll be doing this right.\* with that, Luhan took your arm then carefully put you on his back. He lifted you up and started giving you a piggy back ride on the way to your dorm.

"Myungsoo oppa, don't ever leave me again please." he heard you whispered before you hug his shoulder and rested your head on it.

Luhan glance at your face, "I'm not your Myungsoo oppa but I'm always here when you need me.." he softly whispered, not knowing what his words really meant.

It's already 7pm but Luhan could still see some students around. All of them were staring at the two of you. Luhan only ignored it as he kept on walking.

Soon, both you and Luhan reached the dorm. He carefully knocked on the door as it open just after some seconds. "Omo! What happen to her?" Yoona,

the one who approach the door asked. Then Seohyun and Yuri also showed up.

Luhan glance at you then turned back to face your friends, "Where's her room?" he asked. "But you're a boy and you're not allowed to enter our dorm." Yuri snapped.

"It doesn't matter. Your friend need to take a rest now." he snapped. "Oh! He's right! This way.." Seohyun then led Luhan to your and her room.

As Luhan entered the room, he gently laid you on your bed. "What exactly happen to her?" Seohyun asked.

Luhan shook his head, "I don't know either." he replied, it's true because Luhan was still clueless right now. Just then, you suddenly mumbled in your sleep, "Myungsoo oppa, don't leave me.."

Seohyun, Yuri and Yoona glance at each other then gaze back at you. They softened. \*So it was HIM again.\* that was on their minds upon hearing your mumble.

"By the way," Luhan spoke that made the 3 turn to him. Luhan then pulled out your wallet from his pocket, "She accidentally drop it." he said, handed it to them.

"Uh-oh.." Seohyun took it since she's your roommate. "I'm going now." Luhan said then left. Your friends lightly bowed at him. "Thanks for bringing our friend back here.." Yoona said before closing the door.

Your friends watched you sleep for a moment. "I don't want to

see her like this." Seohyun softly said. "Nado, I don't want see her hurt because of that bastard." Yuri said.

"What are we going to do now?" Yoona asked. "Just act normally tomorrow, as if nothing happens?" Seohyun replied with a questioning tone.

"You think she will be better if we did that? I think it's better if we talk to her about this. She need to wake up to reality that her so-called boyfriend will never come back anymore." Yuri said.

"I agreed to Yuri this time. She need to accept the truth that Myungsoo was already forget about her so she need to do the same thing." Yoona said.

With another glance at you, your friends hoped on their own beds and make their sleep.

That night, Luhan's mind was full of questions. All of it was all about you. The more he think of it, the more he couldn't get the right answers for it.

Soon, Luhan also made his way to dreamland as he completely asleep.

---

The next morning came. It was Saturday, means no class.

Your eyes voluntarily popped open As you stretched your arms upwards and let out a yawn. You scanned around the place and realized that you were at your room.

You frowned, remembering what happen last night. You couldn't remember how did you

end up on your room. The last thing you remembered was you were crying on the abandon room while hugging Myungsoo's guitar.

Again, your heart dropped a bit. You didn't let your tears to burst as you heaved a sigh and got up from your bed.

You skipped outside the room and made your way to the dining area. Your friends glance at your way immediately upon noticing your presence. "Good morning!" you greeted with a smile.

No one give you response. You frowned as you sat next to Yoona. "Umm.. Did something happen last night?" you asked.

"Try to remember." Yuri snapped. You frowned even more as you tried to remember what happen. You did but only the thing that you fell asleep after you cried.

"Umm.. Did anyone of you spotted me.. Umm.. you know where.." you trailed off. "No." Yuri quickly snapped.

You was about to ask her again but then she spoke again, "We didn't saw you but Luhan did."

You made a pause with wide eyes. "Luhan? You mean.. Lu and Han? Lu Han?" you asked. Yuri simply nodded. You turned to Seohyun and Yoona, wanted to get an answers from them to make sure. Then you saw them nodded. Your jaw dropped.  
\*Luhan saw me? So.. He followed me?\*

"He even carried you along the way here." Yoona added. You face-palmed yourself upon hearing that statement. "Aigoo!

That was embarrassing.." you mumbled.

"Look Sooyoung, we knew the reason of your tears last night and it's because of that bastard again." Yuri frankly said.

You lowered your head, "Mian.. It's just really hard to forget about him." you whispered. "Okay, we understand but you need to take care of yourself. If you keep thinking about him, the more you get hurt. You need to forget me. Snap that, you must forget him even how hard it is." Yuri said with concern.

You remained silent, not knowing what to say. Yoona put a hand on your shoulder, "We're not forcing you to forget him today. We just wanted to say what we think is good for you." she said.

"But it will be better if you started to forget him now. That way, you will completely forget all about him soon.." Seohyun added. You just give them a nod.

With that, all of you eat breakfast.

Minutes later, the breakfast was finished. You then let out a sigh and cleared your throat before saying, "I can't promise to forget him that easily but I'll try."

Your friends stared at you in surprise but then smiled. You softly smiled back, giving another hope.

"Oh.. by the way, Luhan give this to us." Seohyun held out your wallet as you gaze down on it. "He told us that you drop it last night."

Your eyes widen then quickly took it from her and immediately scanned it. You stared at your wallet in disbelief when you realized that Myungsoo's photo there was gone.

"Did something missing?" Yuri asked, raising an eyebrow. You was about to say that Myungsoo's photo was missing but then you remembered what had you said to them just now, that you will trying to forget Myungsoo from now on.

So, you shook your head and said, "Ani. Nothing's missing. It's perfectly fine." you said, assuring her.

Suddenly, you felt your phone vibrated from your pocket. You pulled it out and read the text message.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Do you have plans today?*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

## CHAPTER 27

*to: Sooyoung*

*Do you have plans today?*

*from: Monster-Jerk*

You just ignored Luhan's text message, a bit pissed that he might be the one who steal Myungsoo's photo from your wallet. However, Luhan send

you another message the same as he sent to you earlier.

“Hyung, what was Sooyoung noona replied?” Sehun asked Luhan as they were on the practice room and so were the other members of EXO. “She didn’t reply. Maybe she’s busy today. Let’s just don’t disturb her.” Luhan replied with a shrug.

“Try to call her then.” Kris snapped. “What if she’s busy?” Luhan snapped back. “That’s why I’m telling you to call her to make sure if she’s really busy or not.” Kris muttered as the others nodded in agreement.

Without a choice, Luhan dialed your phone number before placing his phone to his ear.

---

*Bzzzzzzzz! Bzzzzzzzzzz!*  
*Bzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz!*

Your phone started vibrating at the table. You glance on it and say the screen says, *‘Monster-Jerk is calling’*

Again, you ignored your phone and rolled your eyes upon seeing the caller ID. Just then, your phone suddenly stopped vibrating.

Just after a few seconds, your phone started vibrating again but you ignored it again. Curious, your friends glance at your phone. “Who is it?” Yuri asked and was about to take a look at your phone but luckily, you took it away in time. “Nothing.” you replied and finally your phone stopped vibrating.

“Why don’t you answer then?” Yoona snapped. “Uh-oh.. It’s

already stop vibrating so no need—” Again, your phone vibrated for the 3rd time that made your words cut off. “Oh! It’s vibrating again! Go and answer it!” Seohyun said. You paused and just stared at your phone.

“I can answer it if you want.” Yuri snapped. You quickly waved your hand, “Ani. i’ll just answer it on my own. Please excuse me..” with that said, you pressed the ‘answer’ button before placing your phone to your ear and went a little far from your friends, not wanting for them to hear your conversation with Luhan.

“Yah, why are you calling?!” you hissed through the phone. There was a silent from the other line until you suddenly heard familiar voices from it but none of them belong to Luhan.

“Go and tell her now.” “Ask her.” “Palli!” “Just ask her, will you?” that was all you could hear from the other line.

“Yah, what’s going on there?” you asked. You heard Luhan took a deep breath through the phone before he replied, “My group members wanted to know more about you. They wanted to hang out with you today.”

Your jaw dropped. “Sooyoung, are you still there?” you heard the other line asked. “What if they found out the truth if I go there?” you whispered. Luhan glance at his co-members first before he whispered back, “Don’t worry I’m here to help you not to get caught.” he assured.

You made a pause, thinking. “Sooyoung-ah, who’s that?” Yuri suddenly asked as

she started to walk towards you that made you stepped backward and held a hand up to make her stop.

“Oh! I have an idea. Just go here with your friends.” you heard Luhan said from the other line after hearing Yuri’s voice through the phone. You took a glance at your friends then sighed, “I guess that would be helping me a bit. I’ll go there with my friends in one condition.” you snapped.

There was a silent from the other line. “So, I think you don’t agree with me so I guess we’re not going. I’ll hang up now.” you said and was about to end the phone call when you heard him let out a sigh before asking, “Okay, what’s the condition?”

You smile through the phone and said, “My condition is just simple.” you started. “Just spit it, will you?” he hissed. “Araseo. I just want you to give me what I wanted to.” you blurted out.

Luhan raised an eyebrow through the phone, “And what is it?” he asked. “You’ll find out later. So, are you agree or not?” you asked back.

Luhan sighed, “Okay. I’ll give you whatever you wanted.” he said. “Good! We’ll be there in some minutes.” with that, you hang up.

Luhan did a poker face as he stared his phone because of your condition but he don’t have a choice or else his co-members will become more suspicious about the relationship between you and Luhan.

“What did she said? Is she going or not?” Baekhyun asked. “Of course she’s going, right Luhan?” Kris snapped.

Luhan eyed him, \*Aish! This is the reason why I hate this guy. So smart.\* but then he nodded, “Yeah! She’s going along with her friends.” he said.

“Woah! Are they beautiful?” Kai asked. They all eyed him because of his question. “I was just asking.” Kai muttered with a pout.

---

“Girls, be ready. We’re going out.” you announced. Your friends give you a questioning look as they tilted their head to you. “We’re going? Eodiseo?” Yoona asked.

“The one who called is Luhan..” you trailed off. “He’s inviting us to go out with him? Is he for real?” Yuri excitedly asked. You rolled your eyes by her reaction then added, “We’re going out with EXO.”

Their eyes rounded upon hearing what had you said. “EXO? You mean all the 12 of them?” Yuri asked with a wide smile plastered on her face. You simply nodded, “Yeah! All the 12 of them. Now, get ready. They’re all waiting for us.” you said.

No need to say it again and your friends hurriedly went to their rooms to change their clothes and so did you. You followed Seohyun on the room to make your clothes changed into decent and comfortable one.

Minutes later, all the 4 of you stepped out. Yuri was wearing a

skirt and a bit simple on top as she always did when going out with boys. Seohyun was also wearing a skirt but longer than Yuri’s and a simple yet cute shirt on top. While both you and Yoona were wearing a jeans and simple shirt on top.

With that, the 4 of you headed to Lotte World since it was said from Luhan text message. It’s not hard to get out from school since the gate was always open every weekend for students’ freedom. Soon, the 4 of you arrived at the Lotte World. Your eyes rounded in excitement. It’s been already 2 years since the last time you got there. The last time you spent time together with HIM. You shook that memories away, wanted to forget all about him starting today.

“Noona! Over here!” you heard Sehun’s voice called you. You searched where the voice coming from as you saw him waving with EXO across your way. You also spotted Luhan with a poker face plastered on his face.

“Omo! I’m so excited!” you heard Yuri mumbling. You rolled your eyes upon hearing her excited voice. With that, you started walking towards EXO’s direction as your friends followed.,

“Annyeong!” Yuri waved, still excited. “Oh! **Ni hao!** I’m Chen.” he waved back. “I know. I’m actually a fan of EXO.” she beamed, proudly as you rolled your eyes on it. “Omo! I feel like we’re idols because of your statement.” Xiumin said as Chen nodded in agreement. Yuri giggled.

“By the way, I’m Yuri.” she

introduced. They boys gave her a smile and wave. “Annyeong haseyo! Yoona-immnida..” she also introduced herself and smiled. Yoona suddenly caught a guy staring at her with interest, it was Kai. She just awkwardly smiled then looked away. “Annyeong! Seohyun-immnida.. I’m also a fan.” she said with a warm smile on her face.

“Come on, let’s go ride a roller coaster!” Chanyeol beamed as Yuri beamed along.

“I’m not going.” Luhan snapped immediately. You stared at him but then said, “I’m not going also.” Luhan give you a questioning look. You only shrugged, “Just go now. Time is running! We’ll just wait for you guys here.” you snapped.

“She’s right! Let’s just ride the roller coaster now. i’m so excited!” Tao beamed. With that, all of them headed to the roller coaster. Kris eyed the two of you first before following the others.

They all went up on partnering. Tao with his Kris hyung, Lay and Suho, Baekhyun and Chanyeol, D.O. with Chen, Yuri with Xiumin, Seohyun and Sehun.

Yoona stared at her friends in disbelief. She couldn’t believe her friends just abandon her like that over the boys. She let out a sigh, “What a true friend they are.” she mumbled with a pout.

“I guess we’re partners?” a voice suddenly said from behind. She spun around and saw Kai smiling at her. “Do I have a choice?” Yoona raised an eyebrow. Kia chuckled, “No, you don’t have.” Yoona rolled her eyes. “Come on. Let’s just



ride this together.” Kai said. Without a choice, Yoona ride the roller coaster with Kai.

---

“Come on, let’s buy ice cream!” you said as you dragged Luhan to the near Ice Cream Parlor. “Two ice creams please..” you said to the vendor. Moments later, the vendor handed two ice creams to you. You politely took it, “Get the payment from him.” you said, motioning Luhan’s way.

Luhan stared at you in disbelief. “Payment, sir..” the vendor said, facing Luhan. You elbowed Luhan, “Yah, she’s asking for payment.” you reminded. Luhan face-palmed himself before he give the payment to the vendor.

With that, both you and Luhan search for a near bench and sat there.

“Here..” you spoke, handed one ice cream to him. Luhan shot you a look, “You trick me!” You rolled your eyes, “Psh! This one is for you so don’t be so cruel. Just take this one, will you?” Still, Luhan didn’t budge and just glared at you.

“Aish! okay, I’ll pay for it. Now, will you please take this one first so I can easily get my wallet?” you asked. With a sigh, Luhan took it.

For his surprise, you didn’t pull out your wallet and just licked your ice cream instead. Luhan frowned, “Yah, where’s your payment?” he hissed. “You’re easy to get trick.” you snapped with a chuckle before taking another lick on your ice cream.

Luhan open his mouth to say

something but you cut him off, “Just eat your ice cream.” you snapped. Luhan frowned then gaze to the ice cream he was holding.

“Why don’t you join them on the ride?” you suddenly asked. Luhan only shrugged and just licked his ice cream. You turned to him, “Don’t tell me, you’re afraid of heights?” you guessed. Luhan made a pause before saying, “Yes, I am. So what?” he confessed in a rude tone.

There was a pause for a moment before you burst into laughter. Luhan glared at you. “Aigoo! I can’t believe you’re really afraid of heights.” you commented between your laughs.

Pissed, Luhan rolled your eyes. “You, why didn’t you ride roller coaster also?” he suddenly asked that made you stopped on laughing. “Umm.. because I’m afraid also.” you replied immediately.

Not convinced, Luhan turned to you as he studied your face. He frowned, “I know you’re not.” he snapped. You stared at him in surprise. “The way how you said it, I know you’re lying. What exactly the reason why you don’t ride roller coaster?” he asked in a serious tone.

You looked away and licked your ice cream once again. You then let out a sigh, “Because I don’t want to remember HIM anymore.” you whispered. “Who? That Myungsoo guy?” he asked. You turned to him and narrowed your eyes to him, “Give it to me.” you said.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Give you what?” he asked, confused. “About the condition I

said before I agree to you on going here, you need to give me what I wanted right?” you trailed off. “So?” he raised an eyebrow even more.

“You have Myungsoo’s photo, haven’t you? Give it back to me now.” you said as you held out a hand, showing your palm. “Well.. I think your guess was wrong. I don’t have your lover’s photo, okay. How could you think that I took it?” he hissed. “You don’t have it?” you asked. “Of course, I don’t have it. I don’t care about your lover’s photo or even any of your photos.” he said, a bit annoyed as he continued his ice cream.

You frowned then continued eating your ice cream, \*If Luhan didn’t take it, then who?\*

## CHAPTER 28

“Hyung! Noona!” both you and Luhan lifted your heads up to see Sehun running towards the two of you while the others behind him.

You stood up and so did Luhan. “How was the ride?” you asked Sehun. “It was fun!” Sehun beamed, panting.

“Yeah! You really had fun! Your face already explains it.” Seohyun snapped. Sehun pouted, “Noona..” Seohyun frowned, “Don’t call me noona. I feel so old.” she snapped.

“But you’re really old.” Sehun commented innocently, earning a laugh from all of you. “Haha!

He said you're old Seohyunnie.." Yuri teased.

Seohyun shot Yuri a look then glared to Seohyun. "Whatever! I'll go buy ice cream for a moment." with that said, she headed to the Ice Cream Parlor. "I want ice cream too, Seohyun noona!" Sehun called as he followed Seohyun.

Yoona chuckled because of their childish acts. "Do you want ice cream too?" Kai suddenly asked as he appeared next to her. Yoona stared at him, surprised.

"My treat." Kai snapped. Finally, Yoona nodded. "Okay then. It's your treat anyways.." she said and smiled. Kai smiled back and with that, they followed Sehun and Seohyun.

Soon, the others also followed the 4 of them except Kris.

Kris approach you, "Aren't you going to buy an ice cream too?" he asked. You open your mouth to give him a reply but Luhan cut you off and gave Kris a reply instead. "We already ate ice cream."

Kris stared at his friend's sudden snap but then smirked. "What a nice bestfriend you are." he commented. Luhan narrowed his eyes on him, "Shut up! Just go and buy for yourself!" he snapped.

"Gege, come here and buy me one too!" Tao suddenly called. Kris turned to his direction, "Coming!" he shouted back. He then glance back at the two of you before he walk off.

As Kris disappeared from the sight, you turned to Luhan and frowned. "You're so rude to

your friend." you said. Luhan shrugged, "No, I'm not. I just wanted him to stay away from us." he said.

"Wae?" you asked. "Because he's smart and I know we still didn't convince him about the 'bestfriend' thingy." he muttered.

You nodded in understanding as a small shape of 'o' formed on your lips.

Soon, the others came back holding their own ice creams. "Where are we going next?" D.O. suddenly asked.

"Let's go for bowling!" Yuri suggested. "I like that idea!" Xiumin agreed. Soon, all of you agreed then headed to the place.

---

"Let's divide each other into 4 groups. The group that will lose is going to treat everyone a lunch." Kris said. Everyone agreed and starting divided yourselves.

First group are Kris, Tao, Sehun and Seohyun. Second group are Xiumin, Yuri, Chen and D.O. Third group are Suho, Lay, Yoona and Kai. For the last group are Luhan, you, Baekhyun and Chanyeol. The girls are separated to be fair.

Every group have two rounds to make. Every round has three sets of bowling pins so all in all are six.

The first one who gave it a try was the first group. Kris got a ball then stretched his arm forward. All of you were focusing on the ball and shoot! All the pins got down. Kris

raised a fist in victory.

Next one was Seohyun. All of you burst into laughter when Seohyun didn't let any pin to get down. The first group got 12 points. For the second team, only Chen and D.O. got the spins strikes. Their group got 10 points.

For the third group, only 1 set got failed. In conclusion, they got 15 points.

For the last group which is your group, Luhan made his way and positioned himself at the center. He stretched his arm backward before stretching it forward.

SHOOT!

All the pins got down which earned 3 points. For the next try, you stepped forward. You did the same as Luhan did. For good, all the pins also got down.

Both you and Luhan decided to play the two existed sets before letting BaekYeol do their assigned sets. Luhan make it first before you. He only got 1 point and so was you.

It's now time for BaekYeol's turn. Chanyeol did it first followed by Baekhyun.

You pressed your palms together hoping that these two boys will not let you suffer for the lunch. But then, Chanyeol did not get any spin down. Your jaw dropped upon seeing what had happened.

"Mian." Chanyeol whispered. You shook your head, "No need to be sorry. I know you did your best." you replied.

Baekhyun then positioned

himself at the center and bowl the ball just in quick. Everything went silent as the movement around went in slow motion.

SHOOT!

All the pins got down. You lightened up and started jumping up and down because of happiness. Your group got 11 points. Even though your group didn't get the highest score, well at least you didn't get the lowest score either.

With that, all of you went out to eat lunch with the treat of group 2 (Chen, D.O., Yuri and Xiumin).

"I did fine in bowling I still end up treating you guys lunch today." D.O. said with a pout. "I think our food will be better if you cook it for us." Kai said.

"After you ordered almost all of the foods here, you're saying that now?" D.O. hissed as he rolled his eyes on his dongsaeng.

"I did fine also but why I did I get this punishment for?" Chen cried. Both Xiumin and Yuri remained silent, not wanting to get blame.

"Let's just eat, shall we?" Seohyun snapped. "Yeah! Noona is hungry." Sehun said and smiled. Seohyun made a face before she started her food.

You shook your head upon seeing everyone's happiness. You then turned to Luhan who was about to start his food when you suddenly noticed the food on his plate.

You quickly reach it and stay it away from him. Luhan raised an

eyebrow at you as the others turned to you in shock.

"This food has seafood on it so you can't this. Just it mine." you explained as you exchanged your plate with him.

"Oh! What a caring bestfriend you are." Kris commented. You glance at him and saw a smirk plastered on his face. You ignored it and just focus on your food.

The others also focus on their foods after hearing your explanation.

"Gomawo.." you heard Luhan whispered. You glance at him but he was already focusing on his food. A smile suddenly formed on your face, \*I see you're starting to warm, Luhan.\*

With that, everyone eat silently.

---

After having lunch, all of you decided to explore the Lotte World. Walk there and there but no one get tired of it.

It was already 5pm. All of you were still walking around. "Let's go ice skating!" Seohyun suggested as she pointed at the ice skating place.

"Yay! I want to try too!" Sehun beamed. Seohyun give him a look but Sehun only give her a smile.

In the end, all of you forced to go on ice skating. Seohyun was the one who excited among all of you as she immediately try on it. Sehun followed her immediately.

Yoona was having a hard time at first but luckily, Kai was there to accompany her.

Yuri on the other hand was enjoying herself with the boys. BaekYeol also enjoying themselves together.

You frowned at the sight, "What kind of friends are they? I want to try it also but none of them was here to help me?" you hissed while doing a poker face.

"Stop making faces." you heard a voice said from your side. You turned to where the voice come from and saw Luhan frowning at you.

You rolled your eyes, "Whatever! Just leave me alone." you hissed, annoyed but Luhan didn't. Instead, he offered you a hand.

You stared at it for a while then titled your head to him and raised an eyebrow. "Come on, I'm offering you my help." he said, gesturing his hand.

You let out a sigh, "Araseo. But," you held a hand out, "...make sure that you won't let me fall." you conditioned.

"Don't worry, I won't. Come on, my hand is a bit tired here." he muttered. You rolled your eyes but then took his hand.

With that, both you and Luhan made your way to the others with a slow pace. Luhan held out his other hand, offering it for you. You warmly took it and held his hands tightly, afraid to fall.

Slowly, you started to enjoy what you were doing not realizing what's happening

around and so was Luhan.

“Hyung, watch out!” Sehun’s voice echoed around the place. Both you and Luhan looked up and saw BaekYeol rushing to your direction. Even BaekYeol couldn’t stop themselves on their tracks. You closed your eyes shut, waiting for the pain to strike.

But you felt nothing. All you could feel was a warm feeling around you. You slowly open your eyes as Luhan’s face greeted you. Then you realize that you were lying on the cold ice place but it’s not really cold that time since Luhan’s arms were wrapping around you while Luhan was on the top of you. He was staring at you that made you stared back.

With that, everything went froze.

## CHAPTER 29

Both you and Luhan stared at each other for a moment. His stare was melting you for some reason.

“Gwenchana?” Luhan finally spoke. You could feel the worry from his voice. You looked away and replied in a low voice, “Oh.. Ne..”

You slowly lifted your body up as Luhan helped you stand while his arms still wrapping around your ways. You stared at his face and studied his expression. Luhan caught you, “Wae?” he asked.

You gulped but you quickly think a reason. You did a poker face and said, “You told me you won’t let me fall.” then you lightly pushed him away, being uneasy by his embrace.

You forgot that you’re still on your skating shoes. Your eyes widen, feeling that you were about to fall once again but Luhan caught you in time. “Be careful.” he whispered.

Before you could say anything, BaekYeol approach the two of you and so were the others.

“Sooyoung, are you alright?” Chanyeol immediately asked. “Is there something hurting on you?” this time, Baekhyun was the one who asking. Luhan shot his co-member a look, “You two almost bump on her. Can you guys please be more careful?” he cursed. BaekYeol lowered their heads.

You grabbed Luhan’s arm that made him look at you. “They didn’t did it on purpose so stop cursing them.” you then turned to BaekYeol, “Don’t worry, you guys didn’t hurt me.” then to the others, “I think we should leave this place now. I feel dangerous here..” you explained.

“Oh right! We should leave now before the boy beside you exploded because of worry.” Kris said with a smirked. Luhan only shot him a glare but then look at you, “Come on, let’s get out of here.”

With that, all the 16 of you leave the ice skating place.

---

“Are you really alright?” Yoona approach you while headed back

to the dorm. You nodded as you smiled, assuring her.

“I don’t really like Luhan being with you but after I saw what he did earlier, I think you’re safe around him.” she commented. You paused as you remembered how your world stop when Luhan save you earlier.

You nodded, “Yeah. Even me, I can’t believe he just did that. He starting to warm day by day.” you said. “I could see that you’re going succeed on your dare.” Yoona said.

You smiled widely and nodded in agreement. “All you need to do is to look for a girl that going to be his target.” she said.

You were stunned by the sudden statement that Yoona stated. Slowly, you nodded. “Yeah.. I must do that.” you whispered but still half of you disagreed that idea.

Luhan was keeping his eyes glued to you while walking on the way to the dorm. “How I wish I have a protective bestfriend like you.” a sudden voice spoke.

Luhan turned his gaze to his side and saw Kris right next to him with a smirk plastered on his face. Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Don’t tell me you’re still not convince that I and Sooyoung are bestfriends?”

Kris nodded without hesitation, “Yeah, I do.” Luhan rolled his eyes, “Whatever! Don’t believe if you don’t want to.” with that said, Luhan walked faster, not wanting to walk side by side with Kris.

Another smirk plastered on Kris

face as he watched his friend walk away.

“Gege, come on! What are you waiting for?” Tao called his hyung. Kris looked up and nodded as he followed Tao.

---

You and your friends waved goodbye to EXO as all of you reach the school. Luckily, it's already late so no one saw you with EXO. With that, EXO and you with your friends got separated as all of you made your way to your respective dorms.

Inside Luhan's and Kris' room, Luhan was already lying on his bed while Kris curiously staring at Luhan. Luhan could see it from the corner of his eye and then he said, “Quit staring at me like that. You can't read my mind by doing so.”

Kris smirked, “I may not read your mind but I know a lot of things about you Luhan.” he said. Luhan sat up and turned to his roommate as he raised an eyebrow, “What exactly you're saying Wu Fan?”

Kris frowned, “Now you called me by my real name. I guess you're piss now. I should shut up now. Goodnight.” with that said, Kris lay on his bed and closed his eyes.

Luhan frowned at his roommate, \*What did he mean by ‘I know a lot of things about you Luhan’? Did he know..\* Luhan shook that thought immediately, \*Ani. It's impossible. No one knew about that. Not even Sehun or any of my friends...\*

With a sigh, Luhan lay back on

his bed and soon, drifted to sleep.

---

You were already lying on your bed but your eyes were still wide open. You tried to sleep many times but you couldn't. The scene of Luhan's arms wrapping at you keeps playing on your mind.

Whenever it will cross on your mind, a smile will suddenly form on your lips. Just then, you remembered how Luhan gaze at you with worry plastered on his face. It was different expression that Luhan usually showing you. As if you're someone special to him.

Your heartbeat started to beat faster when remembering the happenings at the Lotte World especially the ice skating.

You put your right hand to your chest and let yourself feel the beat of your heart. You closed your eyes, \*Aigoo! What's happening with me recently? My heart reacted too much for that monster-jerk! Aish! I don't like this feeling...\*

Moments later, you finally drifted to sleep and made your way to the dreamland.

## CHAPTER 30

It was already Monday. As for your daily routine, you woke up early to prepare yourself for school.

Once you got ready, you headed

to your first class along with Yoona.

On the other hand, Luhan was still asleep. As usual, Kris convinced himself to wake him up. With more careful, Kris stretched his long right leg and used it to shake Luhan's body.

“Wake up, Luhan!” he shouted with full of energy so that Luhan can hear it. To his luck, Luhan started to move as his eyes slightly open.

Luhan frowned, “What is that shout for?” he groaned. “Hello? If you haven't realized, it's already time to get ready for school.” Kris reminded then walked off the room.

With that said, Luhan immediately sat up and prepared himself for school. Soon, he finally finished and followed Kris outside.

EXO was now walking at the corridor, getting the attention of the students around especially the girl students. They couldn't take off their eyes from the 12 handsome boys that they were seeing right now. Just in quick, EXO disappeared from the corridor as they headed to their respective classes.

---

“Good morning class!” your teacher greeted as the time she entered the classroom. “Good morning Seonsaengnim~” all of you respectfully greeted back.

“Before I start the new lesson, I have an announcement to say..” the teacher trailed off, making all of you focused on her.

“Next week will be a special for



us. We're all going to China for a trip. It's actually a one week trip. The Lu's recommended that country because they were there. They want to see all the students and they also want the students to explore China and learn something about their culture." the teacher said.

\*China? Seriously? I guess I'll be alone next week.\* your face fell upon crossing that thought.

"Sooyoung-ah.." you heard Yoona called you, whispering. You turned to her, "Hmm?" you replied shortly.

"Are you going?" she asked. You stared at her for a moment before letting out a sigh, "You know I can't." you said. "I don't have enough money to pay for the trip. I can only afford to attend in this school I got scholarship but the trip isn't included on that." you added.

Yoona looked at you with pity. You smiled at her, "Don't worry about me. You know I'm always alone when the trip days. Just enjoy yourself there, araseo?" you said.

Still, Yoona was staring at you with pity eyes. You reach her left hand, "Come on, don't think about me. I'm really okay. But," you held a hand up. Yoona looked up at you.

".you need to buy something there." you continued. Yoona chuckled then nodded, "Okay, I will." she replied with a smile as you smiled back.

With that, the both of you went back on focusing the lesson.

---

Time fast came. It's already time for the 3rd class. You forgot that Luhan was one of your classmates for the 3rd class as you straightly headed to your chair without noticing him.

You were in the deep thought on what are you going to do next week. You were thinking a plan so that you won't get bored when your friends were gone for a week.

Luhan frowned at you when you sat down on the chair next to him. You could feel that someone was staring at you so you slowly turned your head on the side.

You suddenly gulped and jump a little on your chair, startled to see Luhan sitting right next to you. "Omo! You almost scare me." you gasped as your hand touching your chest.

Luhan raised an eyebrow, "Don't you remember that I'm one of your classmate and more importantly, your seatmate?" he questioned.

You rolled your eyes, "I was just thinking about something okay.." you said. "What is it?" he asked.

"None of your business." you snapped. Luhan rolled his eyes, "Whatever! By the way, are you going on the trip to China for next week?" he suddenly asked.

You made a pause on it. Just when you were about to open your mouth to give Luhan a reply, the teacher suddenly came and quickly start the class not even giving you a courage to give Luhan a response.

After an hour, English class

ended. It's now time for lunch. As usual, your friends were waiting for you outside your classroom. They saw your figure stepped out the classroom with Luhan.

"Sooyoung-ah!" Yuri waved at you with a warm smile. You looked up and smiled. You waved back at them and you approach them. Luhan rolled his eyes and walked off.

"What happen to him?" Seohyun asked. "Who?" you asked, totally confused. Seohyun nodded at Luhan's way, gesturing you to look at.

You followed her gesture and saw Luhan's back while walking away. "Don't mind him. Don't forget that he's still the cold-hearted Luhan that everyone know." you said. "Eh?" Yoona gaped as she frowned at you.

You rolled your eyes, "Nevermind. Let's go and eat. I'm already hungry." you snapped. Yuri nodded in agreement, "Right."

With that, the 4 of you headed to the canteen.

---

"Look, Sooyoung noona is coming with the other noonas!" Sehun's voice echoed around the school canteen, getting the attention of the students inside the canteen.

You face-palmed yourself but then looked up only to see EXO looking at your way.

"Aren't you going to invite your bestfriend to join our table?" Kris snapped Luhan. Luhan looked up at Kris in

disgust. Kris raised an eyebrow, “You’re really not going to invite her?” he gaped.

Luhan narrowed his eyes to his friend but then let out a heavy sigh. He turned to your way and waved, “Sooyoung-ah, come on join us along with your friends!” he called.

Your eyes widen upon realizing what you just heard from Luhan’s mouth. You glance at your friends. They were smiling at you brightly. “Come on, I want to join them.” you heard Yuri beamed on you.

You rolled your eyes then looked back at EXO. Luhan was eyeing you as he glanced at Kris, giving you a hint that he need your help.

With a sigh, you nodded. “Araseo. Come on, girls.” you said then headed to EXO’s table. Your friends happily followed you especially Yuri.

All the girl students around the canteen stared at you in disbelief. Their jaws dropped upon seeing the scene between EXO and you along with your friends.

“They all staring.” you whispered to them as the time you reach their place. “I’ll take care of it.” with that said, Kris jumped on the table, earning the attention of everyone.

“Listen everyone,” Kris started. “As almost all of you know about the rumor that the scholar Han Sooyoung was Luhan’s bestfriend. Well.. that rumor is true. So, If we saw any of you bash her or even her friends, Luhan will make a move just to make you leave this school

immediately. Understand?” he threatened.

All the students gasped but then nodded. Satisfied, Kris jumped off the table then makes himself comfortable on his seat. “Hyung is so cool!” Tao beamed. Kris only shrugged.

Luhan glance at you, “Sit.” he whispered, patted the seat next to him. You wanted to protest because you don’t want to sit next to him but he gesture Kris’ direction. You already got his hint and without a choice, you sat next to him as Sehun on his other side.

As the orders finally arrived, all of you started the food. In the middle of lunch, Sehun suddenly asked you.

“Noona, are you going for the trip next week?” he blurted, making your friends gaze at your way and so did Luhan. He was still waiting for your answer about that question since your teacher cut you off earlier at the class when Luhan was asking you.

There was a pause at the moment. You swallowed your saliva hard before answering, “Ani. I’m not going.” you simply replied then continued your food.

“Eh? Wae?” Chanyeol asked. You shrugged, “Simple: money.” you replied simply.

EXO looked at you sadly. You smiled, trying to lighten up the surface. “Go continue your food guys. Lunch was almost end.” you snapped.

Chanyeol open his mouth to speak once more but Luhan eyed

him to not to do so. Chanyeol just kept his mouth shut and continued his food instead.

“How about you, are you going or not?” Kai whispered to Yoona who is sitting next to him. “I’m going.” she simply replied as her attention focuses on her food. Kai smiled upon hearing her reply and with that, he also continued his own food.

Kris on the other hand was relaxing himself as he watched the conversation. He didn’t say anything because he already knew what going to happen.

---

*Kriiiiiing! Kriiiiiing*

The sound of the bell can be heard around the school. This bell was saying that the lunch was already over.

The others waved goodbye to each other before all of you got separated. Luhan offered you a walk towards your class. Even you wanted to reject it, you can’t because everyone thinks that the two of you are bestfriends.

To be honest, you really wanted Luhan to walk you to your class. It’s just that, you started to feel uneasy around him yet the half part of you was enjoying the moment.

Minutes later, both of you finally reach your class. “Thanks for walking me here..” you said. You turned around and was about to enter the classroom but he suddenly spoke that made you stopped on your tracks.

“Wait!” he snapped. You spun around to face him again, “Eh?”

“Prepare your things for the trip next week. You’re going with us.” with that said, Luhan walked away leaving you dumbfounded.

## CHAPTER 31

A week had already passed in just quick. It was now the day for all the students to get ready for a week trip to China. Since you weren’t joining the trip, you lazily got up from your bed and join your friends for breakfast.

“Sooyoung-ah, what do you want us to buy for you in China?” Yuri asked. You looked up at them and paused, “Hmm.. anything. I’d be happy if you guys buy me anything from China.” you replied.

They nodded in understanding. Soon, the breakfast ended. Your friends went to take a bath and prepared themselves for the trip while you decided to sit on the couch and makes yourself busy on watching TV.

Hour later, your friends finally done preparing. They waved goodbye to you as you waved back and gave them a warm smile, assuring them that you will be okay when they’re gone for a week.

---

“Students, please be ready. We’ll all going to the airport after an hour. Kindly check if someone is missing. Thank you.” the announcer said.

Almost all the students were already there. The famous group

in school EXO was also there.

Luhan looked around searching for you until he saw your 3 friends. He scanned your friends’ direction and saw no sight of you. He frowned.

“Where’s Sooyoung? I thought you paid for her for this trip?” a sudden voice asked.

Absentminded, Luhan nodded and replied. “Yeah.. I already told her—” he stopped halfway just when he realized what the voice had said.

Luhan turned to his left and saw Kris. He gulped, “Yah! How did you know?” he asked. Kris shrugged, “I already told you that I know a lot about you.” he simply replied then went back to the other members.

Luhan made a face, \*Why does he know a lot? I hate him being so smart!! Aish!\*

Luhan ignored his friend and decided to approach your friends. “Oh! Luhan..” Seohyun gasped as he saw Luhan approaching them.

“Where’s Sooyoung?” he immediately asked. Yuri raised an eyebrow, “Don’t you remember? She already said she’s not going.” she snapped.

Luhan frowned, “Aish! I think she didn’t listen to me..” he mumbled but then faced the 3 girls again, “Is she at the dorm right now?” he asked.

The 3 girls simply give him a nod. After seeing their response, Luhan hurriedly headed to your dorm. The 3 girls titled their heads to Luhan and glance to each other, completely confused.

---

*Knock! Knock!*

A knock can be heard inside the dorm. You turned to the location of the door and titled your head. \*Eh? Are they forget something?\* you shook your head by that thought but then decided to approach the door.

Just when the door burst open, an unexpected figure greeted you. “Luhan?” you raised an eyebrow.

Luhan frowned at you, “Why are you still here? Didn’t I tell you to prepare your things for this trip?” he questioned.

“Mwo? I already said that I can’t go. I don’t have money to pay for the trip.” you said. “Who said that you’re going to pay for the trip?” he snapped.

You titled your head to him, “Eh?” Luhan rolled his eyes, “Just go and take a bath now then prepare your things.” he ordered.

“Wait! Wait! I don’t understand.” you said. “I thought you’re smart. Just go and prepare yourself, will you?” he snapped.

You shook your head, “Aniyo. Not until you tell me what’s going on.” you said. Luhan sighed, “Okay. I already paid for your trip so will you go and prepare now because you only have 45 minutes to prepare all the things you needed.” he reminded.

“You paid?” you gasped with wide eyes. Luhan rolled his eyes, “Aish! Just go prepare yourself now.” he hissed as he

pushed you to take a bath.

With that, you did what he told you to do. Minutes later, you stepped out from the bathroom and then started to pack all the things you needed for the trip.

Soon, you're done and went back to Luhan. "Is everything ready now?" he asked. You simply nodded. With that, Luhan grabbed your luggage to help you carry it. You gasped in surprise but you didn't want make an argument with him so you just let him be.

---

"Everyone, get ready! We're now going." the announcer said.

"Wait! Where's Luhan hyung?" Sehun said out loud, letting the others to hear it even the announcer. "Excuse me? Is anyone not here yet?" the announcer asked.

"Yes. Luhan hyung." Sehun replied. "I'm here!" a voice suddenly shouted. All the students turned around and saw Luhan walking towards the direction of the students while carrying a luggage. To their surprised, they saw you behind Luhan as they let out a gasp.

Your friends immediately approach you. EXO did the same thing for Luhan.

"Sooyoung, what are you doing here with Luhan?" Yoona asked. "Yeah! That was exactly what we wanted to know." Kai said.

"Ask him." you said, gesturing Luhan's way. Luhan shrugged, "She's going with us." he simply replied.

"How?" Lay asked. "I'd paid for her of course. She's my bestfriend, remember?" Luhan said, raising an eyebrow. EXO nodded in understanding as Kris remained on his position, already knew that would be happen.

Your friends seem so happy to hear that you're going for the trip while your feeling was hardly to understand. You couldn't know if you would be happy because you're going to China for a trip but after hearing the word 'bestfriend' from Luhan's mouth, you suddenly felt disappointed.

"Is everyone here now?" asked the announcer. "DAE!" the students said in unison.

With that, all of you get on the 5 bus to use on the way to the airport.

---

Moments later, all the bus reached the airport. All of you went out and headed to the airplane.

The students started to search for comfortable seats. You were about to ask Yoona to sit next you but Kai already pulled her to sit next to him while Seohyun was sitting next to Sehun. Yuri was in between Xiumin and Chanyeol.

You let out a sigh, \*I don't think they are really happy that I'm here..\* you pouted but then look for an empty seat. Luckily, there still lot of empty seats there.

You chose to sit on the seat across Yoona's seat. You took the seat near the window so you can freely look at the view

outside.

While you were busy staring at the window, you felt someone sat next to you. You slowly turned to your side as you saw the unexpected person sitting next to you.

"Kris?!"

## CHAPTER 32

"Kris?!" you let out a gasp. You were very surprised to see the person who voluntarily sat next to you.

You started to panic just when you saw Luhan staring at you and Kris. He was standing a little near from your seat with unreadable expression.

You stared at him, hoping that he get your hint. You were hoping that he will help you but he didn't. Instead, Luhan rolled his eyes, totally ignoring you as he sat next to Kai which across to your and Kris' seats.

Your eyes widen in horror. You couldn't believe that he didn't make a move to help you with your current situation. \*Arghh! What's up to him? Didn't he saw me that one of his friend wad sitting next to me? Not to mention, the suspicious and smart one..\* you face-palmed

yourself in disgust.

Kai frowned at his hyung, “Why did you sit here hyung? Aren’t you suppose to sit with your bestfriend?” he questioned, wanting to have alone time with Yoona.

Luhan’s face lit up, \*He’s right. They all know that Sooyoung is my bestfriend so I can sit next to her whenever I wanted to.\* “You have a point dongsaeng.” with that said, Luhan stood up and approach your seat. Kai was happy with his hyung’s decision while the others were comfortably sitting on their own seats.

Seohyun was sitting in between Sehun and Suho as Yuri in between Xiumin and Chanyeol. D.O. and Baekhyun were sitting next to each other while Tao, Chen and Lay sitting all together on the long seat.

---

You were making faces after seeing Luhan’s action. Just then, you heard a grin from Kris.

You turned to him and frowned, “Why are you sitting next to me?” you questioned. Kris turned to face you, “I just want to know more about Luhan’s so-called ‘bestfriend’.” he whispered as his face went near to yours.

You gulped with eyes wide by his sudden action. Just then, you both heard someone cleared his throat. Both you and Kris looked up and saw Luhan narrowing his eyes to Kris with his arms across his chest.

“What are you doing with my bestfriend?” Luhan questioned

raising an eyebrow. Kris smirked then turned to you, “I was just talking to her, right Sooyoung?”

You bit your lower lip at how close his face is from yours. “Uh-oh.. Yeah.” you replied nervously.

Luhan noticed at how close your face with Kris. Without hesitation, Luhan stepped on the scene and pulled back Kris from you.

“Stop asking her. Don’t you see? She’s not comfortable around you. Now, can I take the seat next to my bestfriend please?” he snapped.

\*You’re being obvious, Luhan..\* Kris thought with a smirk. Satisfied, Kris nodded and left the two of you letting Luhan to take his place. He then went to Chen’s, Tao’s and Lay’s seat to join them since their seat is longer than the others.

---

You let out a sigh of relief when Kris finally out of the sight. “I almost died because of him. Good thing, you appeared at the right time.” you said to Luhan.

Luhan narrowed his eyes to you. You gulped, “W-Wae?” you asked, shuttering upon seeing the cold Luhan in front of you again.

“What are two doing before I enter the scene huh?” he asked coldly. “We’re doing nothing.” you quickly snapped.

“Then what did I saw back there?” he asked. “He was just saying that he wanted to know more about me, your

bestfriend.” you explained.

Luhan rolled your eyes, “Whatever. I don’t believe you anyways..” he said and flatted his back on his seat. You frowned then gaze back to the window, “You’re being cold to me again..” you mumbled, feeling hurt for some reason.

Luhan heard it as he turned to you. He saw a frown forming on your face while you were looking at the window. He softened, “Okay, I’m sorry.” he said.

You turned to him in surprise, “Eh?!” you gasped. “Sorry for being cold. I was just mad because of what I saw earlier.” he said without realizing his words.

“You mad? Wae?” you questioned, confused. Luhan was caught off guard but he quickly think an excuse. “I mean, I was mad at Kris by being suspicious about us.” he said.

You nodded in understanding as a small ‘o’ formed on your lips. “So..” you trailed off as Luhan turned to you. “..you’re not mad at me?” you asked.

Luhan simply shook his head, “Ani, I’m not.” A smile formed on your face upon hearing him. “That’s good to hear.” you whispered.

“Hmm?” he asked, didn’t catch up your words. You just shook your head, “Nothing. I’ll just take a nap.” you said. Luhan nodded, “Okay. I’ll wake you up when the plane landed in China.” he said.

With that, you closed your eyes



and soon fell asleep.

---

“Sooyoung-ah, wake up! We’re already here..” you heard a voice trying to wake you up.

Your eyes slowly open as Luhan’s greeted you. His face was too near to yours. You blinked a couple of times but didn’t move. “Come on, we’re here in China now.” he spoke once more.

His voice snapped your gaze. You finally went back to the real world as you realized that Luhan’s arm was wrapping around your shoulder as your head resting on his shoulder.

You immediately pulled back and looked away, “Oh.. Ne.” Luhan stood up, “Let’s go follow the others.” you heard him said. You nodded.

With that, Luhan walked away. You frowned, \*How did I end up on that position? Aigoo! That was really close..\* you shook your head then followed Luhan behind.

As all the students went out from the plane, all of you hopped on the bus on the way to the dorms that all of you going to stay.

At last, you finally had a time with your friends since all the bus was separated between the boys and girls.

It was already 4pm. The bus stopped at the near mall. The assigned teacher let all of you enjoyed at the mall until 6pm before heading to the dorms.

“Noonas!” Sehun happily waved

as he saw you and your friends. “Come on, let’s approach them.” Yuri beamed as she dragged the 3 of you to EXO.

“Are you guys going to buy something inside?” Kai asked. “Umm.. I actually want to buy something...” Yoona slowly spoke.

Kai nodded, “Okay. I accompany you if you want.” he offered. Yoona quickly shook her head, “Ani. I’ll just go with Sooyoung.” she snapped as she grabbed your arm.

“Eh?” you tilted your head to her. “Please..” Yoona whispered. “Uh-oh.. Yeah. I’m going with her.” you said and with that, both you and Yoona left.

Kai pouted. D.O. put his arm around his dongsaeng’s shoulder, “Aww! You’re too obvious, you know that Kai?” he said. Kai frowned at him, “What do you mean?” he asked.

D.O. Smirked then lean in to Kai’s ear then whispered, “I’m saying that you like her and it’s pretty obvious.”

Kai stared at his hyung with wide eyes, “Hyung!” he hissed. D.O. chuckled then face the others, “I’m going to buy something with Kai too.” with that, he dragged Kai away from the others.

“Noona, aren’t you going to buy too?” Sehun asked Seohyun. Seohyun rolled her eyes, “I am too.” she replied, annoyed with Sehun calling her noona.

“I’ll go with you then.” Sehun beamed. “No!” Seohyun snapped and quickly walked

away but Sehun still followed her.

“I think I’m going to buy too.” Yuri said. “I’ll with you noona..” Tao said. Yuri smiled and nodded. “I’ll go too.” Xiumin said. “Nado!” Suho, Lay and Chen beamed in unison.

Baekhyun and Chanyeol glance at each other. “Come on and follow them.” Baekhyun said as Chanyeol nodded in acknowledgement. With that, BaekYeol entered the mall.

Now, only Kris and Luhan were left outside. “I think we need to go together then.” Kris said. Luhan rolled his eyes to his friend before following the others.

With a grin, Kris followed.

---

“So.. What are you going to buy?” you asked Yoona. “Clothes.” she simply replied.

You frowned, “Tsk! Kai already offer to accompany you but you still drag me here instead of him.” you hissed. “I’m not comfortable around him that’s why I wanted you to accompany me instead.” she muttered.

“You know what? I think he likes you.” you said. She rolled her eyes, “Oh.. please, I don’t have time for boys.” she said as she grabbed a baby pink dress. “I want to try this.” she snapped.

You just nodded. “Also this and this then this.” she said as she continuously grabbed some clothes. You nodded once again, “Okay. I’ll just walk around while you were trying all those.” you said.

Yoona nodded in agreement, “Yeah. That’s better.” with that, she headed to the dressing room as you started to walk around the mall.

As you were walking, you accidentally stepped into perfume section. Then there’s one sales lady standing in one stand of perfumes while holding a perfume.

“**Ni hao Miss! We have many perfumes here. You can also try this one.**” you stared at the sales lady in horror when she lifted his hand up and positioned the perfume towards you.

But before the sales lady spray some perfume to you, a pair of arms wrapped around you as your head pressed on his chest, preventing the perfume to go near you.

Luckily, the perfume got sprayed on the person’s back. You slowly looked up to see the person’s face,

“Luhan..”

## CHAPTER 33

“Luhan..” that name suddenly escape from your mouth upon

seeing the person’s face. Still hugging you, Luhan turned to the sales lady and coldly looked at her, “**Stay away that thing from her. She hates perfumes!**” he hissed.

The sales lady was startled by Luhan’s voice as she immediately bowed at him, “**I’m sorry sir. I didn’t mean to do anything bad to her. I’m really sorry.**” with that apologize, the sales lady stepped backward.

Luhan then turned to face you. His cold stare towards the sales lady suddenly changed to gentle and worried, “Gwenchana?” he asked softly. You nodded, “Ne. I’m fine.” you replied as you lowered your head, not wanting to meet his gaze.

Little did you know, Kris was watching the scene with full of interest. He smirked, \*What a sweet scene..\*

“Are you really alright? You don’t feel dizzy or something?” Luhan asked once again, wanted to make sure as his arms still around you. You slowly stepped back, “I’m perfectly fine. Thank you for saving me again.” you said with a smile, assuring him.

Luhan’s heart skipped upon seeing your smile. Just then, Luhan stepped forward towards you until there’s no space between the two of you. Your smile disappeared because of his action but you just remained frozen on your spot. Luhan reached your face and gently caresses your cheek.

That time, you could see that his face was coming nearer and nearer to you. Your eyes widen, \*What is he doing? Is he going to—\* before you could think any longer, a loud voice

suddenly called you interrupting the moment.

“Sooyoung-ah!” Both you and Luhan automatically stepped back to each other upon hearing the voice. You turned to where the voice is coming and saw Yoona running to you with some paper bags along her.

Kris was shaking his head when he saw someone interrupted the scene. \*Oh-ow! Don’t worry Luhan, I’ll help you later..\* with that, Kris walked away to meet the others.

“Oh.. Yoona..” you said, a bit surprised. Yoona raised an eyebrow to you then pointed to Luhan, “Why are you with him?” she asked.

You glance at Luhan who is also looking at you. “He saved me just now.” you said. Yoona frowned, “Save you? Wae? Did someone tried to hurt you?” she asked continuously.

You shook your head, “Aniyo. He saved me from perfume. There’s one sales lady here that was about to spray perfume to me but luckily, Luhan came in time to stop her.” you explained. Yoona nodded in understanding with an ‘o’ shape formed on her lips.

“Are you finished looking for some clothes?” you asked her. Yoona smiled and nodded. “Let’s go back and find the others then.” you said as you looked up at Luhan. He gave you a nod as an acknowledgement.

With that, the 3 of you started searching for the others. The first you spotted were Kai and D.O. at the men section. Kai

immediately waved at Yoona as he saw her. Yoona awkwardly smiled as she waved back. D.O. pushed his dongsaeung to Yoona causing him to hug her.

Kai immediately pulled back, “Mianhe..” Yoona shook her head, “Ani, it’s okay.” she said shyly. Kai then shot his hyung a glare. D.O. only shrugged.

You smiled upon seeing your friend’s reaction because of Kai’s hug. Then you looked up but accidentally met eyes with Luhan. The scene of Luhan caressing your cheek replayed on your mind again. You quickly looked away.

“Hyungs! Noonas!” that voice suddenly popped from nowhere. All of you looked up and saw Sehun running towards the 5 of you while Seohyun on his back with a poker face playing on her face.

“What happen to you?” you asked her. “This boy keeps annoying me.” Seohyun replied as he glared at Sehun but Sehun just smiled at her. Seohyun rolled her eyes.

You chuckled, “You two look cute together.” you commented. “Oh please.. I don’t like to have an annoying and childish person to be with me..” she said with a rolling eyes. You shook your head to her, “If you say so..”

Suddenly, D.O.’s phone rang. “Yeoboseyo?” “Oh chinchacha?” “Yeah, they’re with me.” “Araseo. Araseo. We’ll go there.” with that, the phone call ended.

“Suho hyung called. He said they’re already outside, let’s just meet them there.” D.O. said. All

of you nodded in agreement and with that, all of you exited the mall and meet the others outside.

“The bus will be off soon.” Lay said as the 5 of you meet them outside. “Yeah. I think we should separate now.” D.O. said. You all nodded in agreement.

With that, all of you got separated. Before you could completely leave, you glance one more time to Luhan as he also did that made you surprised but he just flushed you a sweet smile. You couldn’t help but smiled back in return.

Just then, your eyes caught Kris. There was a smile on his face that was hardly to read. You quickly looked away and entered the bus.

## CHAPTER 34

“Students, please listen.” the announcer called. All of you went silent then focus on the announcer. The girls were already separated to the boys.

“Like in Korea, all the girls will be separated to the boys in the dorms here in China. But unlike in Korea, the dorms here are all near to each other so students, please behave. The boys’ and girls’ dorms are just facing each other. Now, please take a look at the list in front to see what room number are you in. Thank you.” the announcer said.

All of you went in front to search for your names and room numbers.

“By the way, Mr. Lu Han, you will be staying at your family’s house according to your parents.” the announcer said once again.

You suddenly stopped on your tracks and glance at Luhan’s way. You could see a frown on his face. You shrugged it off and just focus on searching your name.

On the other hand, Luhan approach the announcer and said that he wanted to stay at EXO dorm. “Sorry but your paren—” “Just tell them I’m staying with my friends.” with that said, Luhan walked away, not giving the announcer a courage to finish her sentence.

Soon, all of you headed to your assigned dorms. Luckily, you will still staying with your 3 friends, Yuri, Yoona and Seohyun.

The more that surprise you was the students that will be rooming at the dorm across your dorm. It’s no other than, EXO.

Another surprised, Luhan was also with them. \*I thought he’s going to stay at their house here in China?\* you wondered. \*Well at least they’re near to our dorm.\* you smiled at that thought then entered the dorm to unpack your things and settled it to your room and so did your friends. After that, you took a shower after your friends.

Meanwhile, Luhan was taking his long shower as Kris secretly sprayed a perfume on Luhan’s shirt on purpose that was placing on the bed.

After that, Kris went to your

dorm and invited you for dinner. Your friends wanted to join but Kris said he can only allowed one girl to enter their dorm or they will caught in no time. Without a choice, your friends finally agreed.

You wanted to reject his offer but Kris already dragged you along with him on the way to his dorm.

---

Moments later, Luhan stepped out from the bathroom only to find his clothes on his bed. He immediately put his pants on and when he was about to put his shirt on, he suddenly smell the scent of perfume.

Luhan frowned, "Eh? Perfume? I don't remember I put perfume here.." he whispered out of the blue. He then walked towards his closet to change his shirt but to his surprise, all his shirt has scent of perfume also.

\*What the?! Who did all of these?! Aish!\* without a choice, Luhan put on the shirt that he was holding instead.

With a sigh, Luhan exited the room to grab dinner with the other members. Surprisingly, he caught you sitting on the dining area next to Kris. He frowned, "What are you doing here?" he asked you, still far from you and not wanted you to smell the scent of perfume.

You looked up, "Oh, Luhan.." you whispered. "I invited her. I just want her to join us for dinner." Kris simply snapped.

Luhan frowned even more, \*This guy. I know you're the one who put perfume on my

shirts. What exactly your planning Wu Fan?\*

"Yeah. I want noona to eat dinner with us too." Sehun said as the others nodded in agreement. With a sigh, Luhan nodded and sat next to Sehun.

You frowned, \*Psh! Why is he so far from me? Didn't he notice that I'm sitting next to his giant friend? Aish!\* Kris smirked upon seeing your expression.

Just then, Kris offered you the food to put on your plate. You bowed a little as you took it and place it to your plate.

Suddenly, you started having a hard time cutting your food as you suddenly heard Kris spoke, "Let me do it for you."

Luhan stared at his friend with wide eyes. \*Wu Fan, what are you doing?\* he cursed on his mind.

Then Kris reached out your plate as he helped you cutted your food. Kris was seriously cutting your food and you couldn't help but stare at him. Luhan narrowed his eyes at the two of you, \*Psh! I can also do that to you but since that giant put perfume on my shirt, I can't go near you...\*

"There you go." Kris handed back your plate to you. You lightly bowed once again, "Gomawo." Kris flushed you a smile, "Not a problem." You couldn't help but smiled back.

With that, you started to eat your food. Kris glance at Luhan's way and saw Luhan rolled his eyes then focus on his food also. Kris smirked, satisfied.

Soon, all of you finished the dinner. Kris turned to you, "Umm.. Sooyoung-ah, can you help me find my ring? I think I accidentally lost it somewhere here. It's important to me so I need to find it immediately."

You stared at him in shock because he's asking for your help but you nodded. Luhan stared at you with wide eyes. He stood up, "Sooyoung, stay here. I'll go with Kris." he snapped.

You looked up at Luhan then to Kris. Kris was looking at you with pleading eyes. You couldn't resist his expression and said, "No Luhan, I'll go help him."

Luhan frowned, "Mwo?" he then let out a sigh, "I'll go with the two of you then." Luhan blurted out.

Kris nodded in agreement, "Okay. Let's go and look for it now." with that said, Kris stood up and walked away as you and Luhan followed. Luhan narrowed his eyes to his friend, \*Whatever your plan is, you will only fail, Wu Fan.\*

The others at the dining area looked at the 3 of you in puzzlement but they just let the 3 of you go as they started cleaning the dining table.

---

First, the 3 of you went to Luhan's and Kris' room to search for Kris' ring there. Luhan was kept his distance far from you as you wonder why but you didn't budge to ask him.

Moments later, the 3 of you got failed on searching. "I think I didn't lost my ring here." Kris

said. "Let's look at the other place." Kris added.

You nodded, "Okay. Where did you go earlier except here?" you asked. Kris paused, "Hmm.." then he brightened, "Come on, follow me." Kris said as he walked out the room.

Both you and Luhan glance at each other before following Kris behind. Kris entered a very small room at the end of their dorm.

"Eh? You went here earlier?" you asked. Kris nodded. "What did you do here then?" Luhan questioned.

"I was just checking the whole dorm and end up here." Kris explained. Both you and Luhan nodded in understanding. With that, the 3 of you entered the very small room that only 5 people can fit to it with no spaces.

Both you and Luhan were focusing on searching when the both of you suddenly heard a click sound coming from the door. Both of you spun around only to see the door closed with no sight of Kris around.

Luhan rushed to the door but it was already locked, "Kris, open the door!" he shouted. "Not at this moment. For now, enjoy yourself with your so-called bestfriend. Bye Luhan!" Kris said as his footsteps go away.

"Hyung, what's going on?" Tao asked as he saw Kris. "Nothing." Kris shrugged.

The others also approach him. "Where's Luhan and Sooyoung?" Baekhyun asked. Kris shrugged once again, "They

want to spent time alone together so don't bother them." with that, he walked out the dorm and tell your friends that you're going to sleep over to their place.

Of course, your friends were shocked but Kris already left them without giving them the courage to ask him.

---

"Damn it!" Luhan cursed under his breath as he heard Kris' footsteps go away. \*So this is your plan huh?! Damn you, Wu Fan!\*

"Luhan, what's going on?" you asked in panic as you walked near him. The scent of perfume suddenly crossed on your nose. You immediately covered your nose and stepped away from him, "You did use perfume again? Aish! Why in this time? Now that we're stuck together in this very small room?!" you hissed.

Luhan face-palmed himself, "He planned it all." he said. "Mwo?" you asked, confused. "Kris planned it all. He's the one who put perfume on my shirt and he even invited you to come over and now this, he locked us in this room." he said.

You run your hand to your hair in frustration and just sat at the corner. "I guess we're really stuck here." you whispered.

Luhan let out a sigh then sat at other corner, not wanting you to smell the scent of perfume on his shirt.

Hour had already passed, both you and Luhan just stayed on the same position. Nothing's

happen, no one unlock the door. Soon, your eyelids started to get heavy as you lean your head to the wall.

Suddenly, a cool breeze of air started to touch your skin. The cool air started to cover the whole surface. Your body started to tremble by the cool air as you hug your knees up to make yourself warm but it's not enough.

Luhan noticed it immediately. Without any hesitation, he started taking off his shirt. Your eyes widen, "W-What are y-you doing?" you asked, still trembling because of cold.

Luhan didn't reply. Instead, he placed his shirt to the corner on his side then walked over to you. You froze on your spot, still puzzled on what's going on.

Luhan then sat next to you and wrapped his arm around you. "Luhan.." you whispered. "Shh.. This will makes you feel warm. Now, sleep." he whispered back.

"But put a shirt on please.." you said, blushing. "I can't. If I do, you're hypersensitivity towards perfume will attack again." he muttered. "But it's cold." you muttered back.

"I know but it's not anymore, now that I'm hugging you." he whispered. You looked up at him only to see him with eyes closed.

With that, you rested your head on his chest and closed your eyes as Luhan rested his chin on top of your head. You didn't think about Luhan being shirtless right now anymore. All you could think was his warm embrace that covering your



body and that you wanted to sleep right at this moment. With a smile unknowingly crept on your face, you fell asleep and so did Luhan.

## CHAPTER 35

It was already morning. Voices and gasps could be heard around. Your eyes slowly open only to see the boys staring at you while Kris had a victory smile on his face.

“Noona, what did the both of you do last night?” Sehun asked pointed at you and the figure next to you.

You frowned in confusion and slowly turned to your side only to greet by Luhan’s half naked body. You realized that he was still hugging you. You gulped as you suddenly pushed him away from you that made him woke up.

Luhan groaned and lightly rubbed his eyes. As the time he open his eyes, the sight of you with a shocked face greeted him.

Luhan was confused at that time, forgetting what happen last night. \*Why am I with her?\*

“I guess, you did enjoy the night. Am I right Luhan?” Kris snapped, interrupting his thought. Luhan looked up and surprised to see his friends at the door.

Luhan realized that he wasn’t wearing a shirt. He immediately stood up and got his shirt at the corner as he hurriedly put it on.

Luhan narrowed his eyes to Kris, “Why did you lock us here last night?” he hissed. Kris smirked, “As if you didn’t enjoy what I did for you.”

Luhan rolled his eyes, “Whatever Kris.” he turned to you, “Come on, I’ll walk you out.” he said. You simply nodded then stood up and followed him.

Before the two of you could completely leave the dorm, Lay blocked the way. Luhan raised an eyebrow, “What?” he asked, annoyed.

“Mind explaining what we saw back there?” Lay said. “There’s no need to explain.” Luhan snapped and was about to walk away but Lay turned to you instead and so did the others.

“If Luhan don’t want to say anything. I guess, you can explain it by yourself.” Lay said. Luhan stared at him in disbelief.

You gulped. “Umm.. What you guys saw back there,” you trailed off, playing with your fingers. “Kris locked us last night and since we don’t have a choice, we stayed there the whole night.” you added.

They frowned. “That’s not what we wanted to know. What we mean is why we saw the both of you hugging each other while Luhan is shirtless?” Baekhyun pointed out.

You bit your bottom lip. Before you could explain, Luhan cut you off. “If you guys really want to ask that, I guess it will be better if Kris answer that question for us.” he said, looking at Kris’ way.

All the boys turned to Kris’ direction and titled their head in confusion. “Gege?” Tao frowned.

Kris shrugged, “I don’t know what you are talking about Luhan.” Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Oh really? How will you explain my shirt having a perfume on it? You even invited Sooyoung to come over without saying it to me. And how about making an excuse that your ring was lost just to lock us in one room huh? You did it all, aren’t you?”

Kris paused. The others stared at Kris, waiting for his reaction. “You did all of that, hyung?” Chanyeol asked.

Once again, Kris only shrugged. “I did nothing. I’m innocent here.” he defended. “I believed you **gege**.” Tao said with a smile.

Luhan rolled his eyes. “Whatever! Believe him if you want. We’ll go ahead now.” Luhan took your hand then walked out along with you. Luckily, the scent of perfume on his shirt wasn’t that strong anymore.

---

“I apologize for Kris behavior. I don’t know what exactly on his mind to do all of that. Mianhe..” Luhan apologized as the two of you went out from the dorm, facing your dorm.

You shook your head, “Ani, it’s okay. It’s not your fault anyways.” you said as you smiled, assuring him. Luhan happily smiled back.

The both of you were smiling at each other for a little moment just when you realized that he was still holding your hand. You slowly looked down to your hand that was on his. Luhan followed your gaze and realized that he was still holding your hand.

He slowly released you, “Oh.. Mian. I haven’t realized until now.” he apologized again. You shook your head again then laugh a little.

Luhan frowned and titled his head to you in confusion, “What are you laughing at?” he asked.

You looked up at him then smiled, “I was just surprised that you know how to apologize. You did it twice just now.” you replied.

Luhan narrowed his eyes to you, “Mwo? Who told you I don’t know how to apologize? Of course, I do.” he snapped with a rolling eyes. You shook your head in amusement, “The monster-jerk is back again..” you whispered.

“Mwo? What did you just called me?” Luhan narrowed his eyes on you once again.

You gulped, \*Aigoo! I’m dead!!\* you started to step backward but Luhan followed you by stepping forward.

Suddenly, your back pressed at the wall of your dorm. Luhan was now in front of you as he placed his palm at the wall, next to your face.

You gulped at him with wide eyes. Luhan smirked, “You’re now cornered. Now, say it again. The name you called me

earlier.” he threatened. You bit your bottom lip as both of your hands automatically lifted up. You pressed both of your palms on his chest, trying to push him away from you.

The scene of shirtless Luhan hugging you last night played back on your mind as your palms touch his chest. Still, Luhan was on position. He was still in front if you while one palm pressing on the wall. However, your hands were still placing on his chest.

There was a silence around the two of you as if the time suddenly stopped at this moment. Luhan was staring at you as you stared back. The both of you stayed on that position until a voice interrupted the moment.

**“So, this is the reason why you wanted to stay here hmm?”**

Both you and Luhan slowly turned to direction of the voice at the same time. You titled your head at the owner of the voice as Luhan gulped,

**“Mom...”**

## CHAPTER 36

**“Mom...”** you heard Luhan said. Both you and Luhan

straightened up as you stared at his mom.

Mrs. Lu walked towards you and Luhan. She eyed Luhan, **“Let me in.”** she said. Luhan nodded.

He turned to you, “You can go now.” he said. “No. Let her go with us. I still need to ask her.” Mrs. Lu snapped. You could say that she wasn’t good pronouncing hangul but it was still understandable.

“No mom.” Luhan snapped. Mrs. Lu raised an eyebrow to him then turned to you, “I’m inviting you to come. So, are you going accept it or not?”

Without any hesitation, you nod your head. “I will.” you said. Luhan stared at you in disbelief. You just give him a nod, assuring him.

With a sigh, Luhan nodded. “Okay. Come in.” Luhan said as he open the dorm’s door for you and his mom.

---

“Oh! Hyung is back!” Sehun shouted. The others looked up. “Yeah! Luhan, tell us the whole sto—” Kai was cut off when the sight of Luhan’s mom appeared behind Luhan.

The boys gasped even Kris. It was unexpected. The more that surprise them was they saw you along. The boys bowed at Mrs. Lu, **“Ni Hao Mrs. Lu!”** they greeted in unison.

Mrs. Lu smiled, “You guys still haven’t change. Still respectful unlike my son.” she said. **“Mom!”** Luhan whined, earning a giggle from you.

Mrs. Lu caught you that made you stopped and keep your mouth shut. Mrs. Lu's gaze went back to the boys. "Okay. Let's all have a seat." she said.

The boys nodded as they looked a place for themselves. Mrs. Lu took the seat in front of the boys as Luhan on her side. Luhan patted the seat next to him, gesturing you to sit. You nodded and sat next to him.

**"What brings you here Mrs. Lu?"** Kris asked immediately. Mrs. Lu chuckled, **"What a sudden question from you Wu Fan. At least ask what my condition is, you know."** she snapped.

**"I'm sorry, Mrs. Lu. I was just wondering by your sudden visit."** Kris explained. **"I thought you're smart."** Mrs. Lu stated.

**"So, I guess it's all about Luhan then."** Kris said. Mrs. Lu smiled, **"Guess I'm not wrong. You are really smart, Kris."**

"Wait! I don't understand a bit." Baekhyun snapped as he titled his head in confusion and so did the other members of EXO-K.

Mrs. Lu chuckled, "Uh-oh.. My apology. So, I'm here to visit my son and guess what? He greeted me with a girl. That was unexpected." she said with a frown.

You gulped, \*Aigoo! Is she mad?\* Luhan shrugged, **"If you're here to ask me to go with you, my answer is no. I want to stay here with my friends."** he stated.

**"Oh really? And how about the girl next to you? Is she your girlfriend or something?"** Mrs. Lu turned to you, **"Mind introducing yourself to me?"** she asked.

**"Mom, she can't understand--"** Luhan's words were cut off by your sudden stand up. Luhan stared at you while raising an eyebrow. He was confused by your action and so did the other EXO members.

You faced Mrs. Lu and politely bowed, **"Ni Hao! I'm Han Sooyoung. Third year student. One of the scholars of SM University. I'm Luhan's bestfriend. It was really nice to meet you, Mrs. Lu."** you introduced with a warm smile then sat back.

The boys' jaws dropped upon hearing you speaking in mandarin fluently. Even Chen and Xiumin weren't that good as you. Luhan was stared at you in surprise and amusement at the same time.

You suddenly saw Mrs. Lu smiled, **"Nice meeting you too. How come Luhan didn't mention you to me and you said you're his bestfriend?"** she said, confused.

You glance at Luhan, giving him a hint for help. Luhan faced his mom, **"No reason. I just don't feel like telling you about her."** Luhan replied. Mrs. Lu rolled her eyes on his son's reply. **"I guess you don't really want to come with me to our house."** she stated. Luhan nodded, **"Right! So, go ahead now."**

"Aish! I shall start to learn mandarin now. I was like an idiot here." Baekhyun whined,

earning a laugh from Mrs. Lu. "Oh.. I'm sorry again Baekhyun. Well.. As the other understand our conversation, Luhan wanted to stay here and he also wanted me to go back home now." she let out a sigh, "I'm a good mother so I will but," she held out a hand.

Luhan raised an eyebrow at his mom. You titled your head. "Sooyoung will go along with me." Mrs. Lu added. The boys stared at her in disbelief. Luhan was too shocked by his mom's statement that he couldn't react immediately for that.

Mrs. Lu peeked at you, "You're coming, right?" she said with a serious expression. You gulped, \*She's beautiful but she's a bit scary. She's also the same with Luhan.\* without a choice, you nod your head.

"Okay then. We're going now." Mrs. Lu said standing up. She glanced at you before turning to walk towards the door. You nodded once again as you stood up to follow her.

Luhan suddenly grabbed your wrist that made you stopped. "You can't tag her along. I'll just go with you." he said that made his mom stopped half way.

Mrs. Lu turned around, "I'm sorry son but I've already chose her to come with me. Let's go Sooyoung." she called. You turned to Luhan then removed his hand from your wrist, "Don't worry, I'll be alright." you assured him.

"No! If you want Sooyoung to come then I'll come with her too." Luhan said. Mrs. Lu faced Luhan and crossed her arms across her chest as she narrowed

her eyes on him, “You can’t. I have something to discuss with her alone. Boys,” she eyed EXO, “don’t let him followed us or you will get punishment from me, araseo?” she threatened.

EXO nodded all together. With that, they held Luhan back. Mrs. Lu looked at your way before walking out of the dorm. You glance at Luhan one more time, ‘I’ll be right back!’ you mouthed before you follow Mrs. Lu outside.

When both you and Mrs. Lu completely disappeared at the dorm, the boys finally released Luhan. Luhan run his hand up to his hair in frustration, “Aish! Mom is really something. If she did something bad to Sooyoung, I will never come back in our house anymore.” he groaned.

They boys only laugh at his reaction. Luhan narrowed his eyes to them, “You guys aren’t helping!” he hissed.

Kris chuckled, “I did help you last night, remember?” he reminded. Luhan rolled his eyes, “Whatever you say Wu Fan!”

“By the way, what did the two of you do last night hmm?” Kai asked with playful smile forming on his lips. Luhan stood up, “You guys aren’t really helping! Aish!” he hissed and went to his room then shut the door closed with a loud bang.

## CHAPTER 37

You were very nervous being alone with Mrs. Lu. She looks

beautiful yet scary at the same time.

The both of you entered the car at the parking lot then the car droved off. The ride was silent. Neither you nor Mrs. Lu wanted to open a conversation. That time, you already texted your friends about where were you right now so they won’t get worry.

Minutes later, the car finally stopped at the big mansion. As you stepped out from the car, your eyes rounded. \*This must be their house. If I were Luhan, I’ll choose to stay here than the dorm.\* you thought.

“Are you coming or not?” Mrs. Lu asked, snapping your thought. You looked at her then nodded, “Ne, I’m coming.” with that, you followed her inside the mansion.

\*I wonder why did she bring me here?\* that was the question on your mind as you glanced at Mrs. Lu.

Suddenly, you saw a man at the same age with Mrs. Lu. “**Honey, you’re back.**” he said to Mrs. Lu with a smile.

Mrs. Lu smiled back then nodded. \*They’re so cute..\* you thought.

“**Where’s Luhan?**” Mr. Lu asked his wife. Mrs. Lu shook her head, “**He doesn’t want to go with me and go back here.**”

“**I told you so.**” Mr. Lu said. “**But I brought someone.**” Mrs. Lu snapped, gesturing your way.

Mr. Lu followed his wife gaze and spotted you behind her. “**Who is she?**” he asked as he

looked at you. You bowed, “**Ni hao! I’m Han Sooyoung. Third year student. One of the scholars of SM University. Lu-Luhan’s be-bestfriend.**”

\*Aigoo! Why am I shuttering on that part?? Aish!\* you cursed yourself.

Mr. Lu stared at you blankly then to Mrs. Lu, waiting for explanation. Mrs. Lu chuckled, “**I’m surprised too but it’s true. I caught her with Luhan. The boys already knew about this.**” she explained. Mr. Lu looked at you, “**This is the first time Luhan caught with a girl. I thought he hates girls?**” he asked Mrs. Lu.

\*Right! He does hate girls but he doesn’t see me as one of them..\* you pouted at that thought.

“**That’s what I also thought but I guess we’re wrong. If you was there and saw our son’s reaction when I tell him I’ll bring Sooyoung along with me. Oh my god, he said that he’s going with me instead of her. Our son already grown up now..**” Mrs. Lu said, giggling.

You frowned, \*What is she talking about? Luhan was only worried that we must get caught off guard if I’ll go with his mom. That’s all. Am I right?\* you convinced yourself not to think too far.

Mr. Lu chuckled, “**So, she’s special huh?**” he said with an amused smile. Mrs. Lu nodded, “Yes, she really is.”

You wanted to join there conversation and explained that they were wrong but you don’t

know how to explain it.

“Come on then. Let’s et lunch together.” Mr. Lu said in Korean to you. \*His accent is cute just like his wife.\* you smiled then nodded. Mr. and Mrs. Lu smiled. With that, the 3 of you ate lunch together.

---

“Come on, I’ll show you Luhan’s room.” Mrs. Lu said after the lunch was finished. “Eh?” you tilted your head to her.

Mrs. Lu turned to his husband, **“I’ll show her around first.”** she said. Mr. Lu nodded, **“Sure. I still have something important need to finish today anyways.”** he told us.

With that, Mr. Lu left. Mrs. Lu turned to face you again, “Let’s go.” You just nodded then followed her.

Both of you went upstairs until Mrs. Lu stopped in front of one of the rooms there. She carefully twisted the door knob and slowly entered the room as you followed.

“Come on, I’ll show you some pictures of Luhan.” she excitedly beamed as she got the photo albums in the drawer. She then sat on the bed as she gestured you to sit next to her. You did.

“Look at this. Isn’t he’s cute back in his childhood days?” she suddenly asked while pointing at the baby Luhan’s pictures.

\*He’s still cute today though..\* you thought unknowingly. You nodded, “Yes, he is.”

The two of you continuously scanned the photo albums and started to be comfortable around Mrs. Lu. She was actually a one cheerful mom. She talks a lot and smiled many times.

You looked at her and smiled, admiring her being cheerful. Just then, Mrs. Lu noticed you. “Wae?” she asked.

You snapped out your gaze and shook your head, “Ani. I was just remembering my mom from you because you two are the same. She loves to smile like you do.” you said and smiled a little.

“Wae? Didn’t you see your mom when you were in Korea?” she asked. You shook your head, “She’s in province and I can only see every summer.” you told her.

“But summer was nearly coming.” she said. You nodded with a smile, “Yeah. I can’t wait until summer came.” you said.

Mrs. Lu smiled at you, “You does really love your mom huh?” she snapped. You smiled even more then nodded, “Yes, I really do.”

Mrs. Lu sighed, “I wonder if Luhan loves me too. I guess he doesn’t. If he does, he will choose to stay here with his parents. Right?”

You looked at her. You could feel the sadness on her voice and expression. Before you could say anything, your phone suddenly rang.

Both you and Mrs. Lu gaze down to your phone. You stared at the screen of your phone and saw Luhan as the caller.

“It’s Luhan, isn’t it?” Mrs. Lu asked. You looked at her then slowly nodded. “Don’t answer then.” she snapped. “Eh?”

Mrs. Lu fixed the photo albums then placed it back to its original place then said, “I’m still mad at him so don’t answer his call for me.” she explained.

You smiled at her, \*She’s a bit childish. That one is different from my mom.\* you simply nodded, “Okay. I won’t answer.” with that, you let your phone ring, not bothering to answer it.

“**Xie xie.**” Mrs. Lu smiled. You smiled back.

With that, Mrs. Lu toured you around their mansion.

---

“Aish! Why aren’t she picking up? Did something happen between her and mom?” Luhan groaned at his room when you didn’t answer his call.

He already called you many times but the other line was kept ringing and then ended up with the service talking at the other line.

Luhan dialed your phone number again, wanted to give it a try once again. For the nth time, he failed.

With that, Luhan grabbed his jacket and went out his room then walked towards the main door.

“Hyung, where are you going?” Sehun called but Luhan already left. Kris smirked, “He’s going to get her.”



The others looked Kris in confusion. "He's going to get his so called 'bestfriend'." Kris repeated. With that, the boys nodded then glance at the door.

---

*Knock! Knock!*

"Wait up!" Yuri shouted as she heard a knock from their dorm's door. She then approached the door only to see Luhan there.

"Wh—" before she could finish her question, Luhan asked her instead. "Where's Sooyoung?" he asked.

"Eh? I thought she were with your mom? Wait! So, she's alone with your mom? You didn't even go with her? What's exactly going on?" she asked continuously.

Luhan didn't bother to answer all her question and he stormed off, leaving Yuri hanging.

"Yah! Luhan, where are you going?!" she shouted that made Yoona and Seohyun approach her.

"What was that shout for?" Yoona asked. "Luhan just got here and asked where Sooyoung is." Yuri replied. "I thought was with his mom?" Seohyun asked, confused.

"Yeah. That was also I thought. Come on, let's ask EXO." Yuri said and with that, the 3 went to EXO dorm.

---

"How did you get close to my son?" Mrs. Lu suddenly asked

while you two are walking around the mansion which is made you stunned. Even you, you don't know how to answer that question. Sure, you were close to Luhan but you can't tell anyone about how the two of you started.

"Umm.." you trailed off, trying to think a right excuse but before you could say anything, a loud bang could be heard from the main door.

Both you and Mrs. Lu looked at the direction of the door from upstairs only to see a very familiar figure there.

## CHAPTER 38

There he is, Luhan was standing right at the main door while looking around the house. "Luhan.." you suddenly whispered.

Mrs. Lu looked down at Luhan, "**What are you doing here son?**" she asked that made Luhan looked up and saw you right next to his mom.

You saw him frowned then made his way upstairs until he was now in front of you. He grabbed you by your wrist and started dragging you away.

"Wait, Luhan." You snapped but Luhan didn't stop dragging you an just continued. "**Luhan, where are you taking her?**" Mrs. Lu called.

"**We're going back to the dorm now.**" Luhan shouted back, still mad at her mom. With

that, Luhan started dragging you downstairs. "Luhan." you called out his name again.

He ignored you again and just continued dragging you. "Luhan!" you half-shouted. Again, he ignored you.

Before Luhan could completely reach the door, you shouted. "LUHAN!" then you twisted your wrist to escape by his grip.

Luhan froze by your sudden shout and so did Mrs. Lu who was watching the two of you upstairs. Slowly, Luhan turned to face you.

You frowned at him, "What do you think you're dong?" you hissed. Luhan stared at you in confusion, "Can't you see? I'm saving you from mom." he replied.

"You don't understand. Your mom isn't bad to me so there's no need for you to save me." you said, a bit irritated. Luhan was speechless at this moment that he can't say a word to reply to you.

You let out a sigh then turned around and looked up to Mrs. Lu. You bowed, "**I'm sorry Mrs. Lu but it's already late now. I think it's time for me to go back to our dorm. Thank you for this day and please say thank you to Mr. Lu for me.**"

Still dazed on the happenings, Mrs. Lu just gave you a nod. You bowed once again and say goodbye before exiting the mansion.

Luhan started to follow you but then stopped half way. He took a glance at her mom. He bowed first before completely followed

you.

Mrs. Lu was amazed because of the happenings. \*Who knows Luhan was so protective?\* she chuckled by that thought with a shook of head.

She let out a sigh, **“I think that girl makes Luhan to be that way..”** she whispered and smiled. With that, she went to her husband to bid your ‘thank you’ like what you said just now.

---

You continued walking, completely ignoring Luhan. \*Now, Mrs. Lu will think that I don’t like her..\* you sighed without focusing on your way.

“You were at the wrong way.” You suddenly heard Luhan said, snapping your thoughts. You turned to him while raising an eyebrow.

“This way is the way to the dorms.” He said, gesturing the way. You didn’t say anything and walk on the way he pointed.

Since this is your first time in China, you’re not familiar with the places. Luhan noticed that you’re guessing about the way to the dorms so he kept gesturing the right way to you.

Finally, the both of you reach the Bus Stop. Still ignoring Luhan, you hopped inside the bus as he followed.

You chose the seat at the end of the bus. You sat on the left side, beside the window while Luhan on the other corner.

You kept your eyes glued at the window, not wanting to face

Luhan or even talk to him. On the other hand, Luhan was kept glancing on your direction. He could feel that you’re still mad at him because of he did earlier so he didn’t approach you or anything, not wanting you to get piss even more because of him.

Moments later, the bus finally stopped. Both you and Luhan hopped off the bus and started walking on the way to the dorms. The two of you walked side by side with silence filled the atmosphere.

Luhan glanced at you, “Are you still mad at me?” he asked, broking the silence. You didn’t say anything to reply him and just continue to walk.

Luhan’s face fell. \*I guess she still mad at me..\*

Minutes later, the both of you reach the place. As the both of you were walking on the way to the dorms, you suddenly saw EXO along with your 3 friends stepped out from EXO’s dorm.

You frowned, \*What did they do there?\* you wondered. Luhan also was frowning on the sight.

“Oh! There they are!” Xiumin said pointing on your and Luhan’s direction. The others followed his point and saw both you and Luhan walking towards the dorm.

Your friends run to you. “Sooyoung, you’re back!” Yuri beamed in relief. You just gave her a nod, “I’m tired. Come on inside.” you said before entering the dorm.

Your friends glanced at each other then to Luhan. “What happen to her?” Yoona asked

him.

Luhan sighed then shook his head. With that response, he also entered their dorm. EXO glanced at each other then to your 3 friends. They are all confused on what’s going on but they decided to go back to their respective dorms to take a rest.

---

Luhan was already lying on his bed, still fully awake. He was staring at the ceiling blankly.

On the other hand, Kris was sitting on his bed while his back pressing at the headboard of his bed. He was busy staring Luhan, studying him.

“Is there something happen at Lu’s mansion?” Kris suddenly asked, snapping Luhan out of his daze.

Luhan turned to him with a paused. He then reply him a simply shrug. “Nothing happen.” He replied.

Kris frowned, “Oh really? But your words aren’t matching with your action.” he muttered.

Luhan let out a heavy sigh, “Just sleep and don’t bother me, will you?” he hissed. Kris shrugged, “if you say so..” with that, he finally lay on his bed.

Luhan glanced at Kris’ direction. He saw that Kris was already laying on his own bed while Kris’ back facing him.

With a sigh, Luhan took his phone out of his drawer and started dialing.

Little did he know, Kris was still awake but luckily, Kris doesn’t

want to disturb Luhan at this moment and just wanted to hear what Luhan is going to say on the phone.

---

“Sooyoung, did something happen between you and Luhan’s mom? Did she do something bad to you?” Seohyun asked in concern while the two of you already at the room.

You simply shook your head, “Nothing happen. I don’t want to talk about it anymore. Let’s just sleep.” you said and lay on your bed. Seohyun nodded in understanding, “Okay. Jalja~”

“Jalja~” you replied in a low voice before closing your eyes. Just when you was about to visit the dreamland, your phone suddenly rang.

You took out your phone only to see Luhan’s name on the screen. You only stared at it, not knowing what to do. Half of you wanted to answer it but the other half was convincing you not to do so.

“Sooyoung, who’s calling? Why don’t you answer it? The sounds of your phone made me awake again.” Seohyun suddenly mumbled, still half asleep.

Just then, your phone stopped ringing. You heaved a sigh. Just after a few seconds, it rings again. You heard Seohyun groaned, “Sooyoung, just answer that please. It’s disturbing my sleep.”

“Ohh..” with another sigh, you finally pressed the answer button. You then placed the phone on your right ear but

didn’t say anything.

“Finally, you answered my call.” You heard the other line sighed in relief. Still, you didn’t speak.

“Sooyoung, are you there?” you heard the other line asked. Once again, you just remained silent. At this moment, you actually don’t want to talk to him yet because you were still mad at him.

“Sooyoung, I know you were there. Can you please say something?” he said with a pleading voice. You don’t know why but your mouth was remained shut at this moment.

You heard a sigh from the other line again. “I guess you’re still mad at me. I know what I did earlier was wrong. I was just being emotional. I don’t know but I feel like I need to protect you by mom.” he said.

You softened but still didn’t say a word.

“I’m sorry. I really am. I know I should ask you first before taking an action but I didn’t. I was just mad because mom tagged you along with her without saying this to me. I was afraid that she must hurt you or something. I was worried.”

Your heart fluttered because of his words. You open your mouth to speak but he cut you off.

“I know you’re still mad at me so don’t force yourself to say anything to me. I have one more thing to say before I hang up this. Please forgive me. I promise I will never do those things again. I don’t know if this is right but,

I can’t take to see you mad at me. Goodnight.” with that, Luhan hang up.

## CHAPTER 39

You stared at your phone after Luhan ended the phone call. For some reason, his words somewhat hit you.

You frowned, \*What is that suppose to be mean?\* you asked yourself.

You let out a sigh and shook the thought on your head away. You don’t want to think anymore or you will just end up thinking a bit too far.

You then decided to close your eyes again and soon, you finally fell asleep.

---

Meanwhile, Luhan heaved a sigh while his back pressing at the headboard of his bed.

On the other hand, a smirk was forming on Kris’ face after hearing his friend’s conversation with you on the phone.

All of a sudden, Kris sat up unexpectedly which made Luhan startled. Luhan looked at Kris’ direction in disbelief.

“What? How long are you awake over there?” Luhan quickly asked. Kris raised an eyebrow on him, “What do you think?” he replied him a question.

Luhan paused. "Don't tell me..." Luhan shook his head, "Ani, you can't be."

"I can't be what?" Kris asked. "Are you talking about your conversation with your so-called 'bestfriend' in the phone?" he added.

Luhan gulped as his eyes suddenly closed because of his friend's statement. \*He does heard me..\*

Kris smirked, "You can't take to see Sooyoung mad at you huh? I see.." he teased.

Luhan open his eyes and stared at his roommate. "Of course. Who can take to see your bestfriend mad at you? No one right? Or are you?" he snapped.

Kris rolled his eyes, "Nice excuse Luhan." he said then lay back on his bed. Luhan was about to say something to him but Kris' eyes were already closed.

Luhan heaved a sigh, \*I need to be more careful now or Kris will find out the truth.\* with that, he lay on his bed.

It took him an hour before he completely fell asleep.

---

Morning came. All the students gathered at the hall for the announcement of the first activity that will be performing today.

You saw Luhan there but you kept yourself cool and not to take a glance at him. Even you weren't looking at him, you could still see at the corner of

your eye that he was looking at your way.

You started to feel uneasy because of his stares. You closed your eyes and breath in and out, \*Please look somewhere else..\*

Just then, you felt someone tapped your shoulder. You open your eyes only to see Yoona staring at you while frowning, "Are you okay?" you heard her asked.

"Eh?" you gasped. "Your breathing caught my attention. Are you okay? Did you smell some scent of perfume around?" she asked worriedly.

You shook your head, "Ani. I'm perfectly fine. I was just nervous maybe because of the upcoming activity?" you replied with a questioning tone.

She nodded in understanding, "Oh yeah. I almost forgot, this is your first time joining an activity trip. Don't worry, you will enjoy the activities for sure." she assured you.

You gave her a smile then nodded. \*I'm lucky to have my friends around me.\* you thought, thankful.

"Everyone, please listen." The announcer finally spoke. Everyone's attention went focus on the announcer now. All of you were waiting for the announcer to continue.

"So, the first activity will be partners but not all of you can choose a partner by your own. Just only the few students. I have names here and only selected persons were here to choose their partners. Let's start,

shall we?"

"DAE!" all the students responded in unison.

"First, Park Chanyeol. Choose your partner." The announcer said. "I'll go with Baekhyun." Chanyeol announced.

Everyone knows that he's going to choose him so no more reaction came up.

"Next, Kim Jongin." The announcer called. All the students looked at Kai's direction, waiting for him to choose for his partner.

Kai looked around. Slowly, he walked towards one of your friends' direction. It was Yoona. "I chose her to be my partner." Kai simply announced.

Yoona stared at him in shocked. Kai only flushed her a sweet smile. All the girls gasped by Kai's sudden announcement.

"Quiet everyone. Next is Oh Sehun." the announcer called out. Now, all the attention was on him.

Sehun glanced at Seohyun's direction which made her gulped. \*Aigoo! Don't tell me..\* Seohyun didn't finished her thought as Sehun said, "I'll be with Seohyun noona." he announced as he went up next to her.

Seohyun face-palmed herself, \*Aish! I don't want this childish boy to be my partner. I don't want to lose the first activity with him. Can someone please change my partner?\*" she sighed.

Sehun smiled at her, "This will be interesting to be with you

noona.” he beamed. Seohyun rolled her eyes on him, “Whatever!”

“Chen was the next one.” the announcer said. “I’ll go with Baozi.” He quickly said.

“Lay?”

“I’ll go with Suho.” Lay said.

“Next is Wu Fan.” The announcer said that made everyone went silent. Every girl wanted to be his partner of course. His charisma was different to any member of EXO.

Slowly, Kris looked up and met your eyes. You gulped, \*Why is he staring at me?\* you wondered, nervous.

Luhan noticed the way where Kris was looking. His eyes widen when he realized that his friend was looking at your way.

Suddenly, Kris started to walk towards your direction. You froze as if the time suddenly stopped. Everything went in slow motion for you.

Still, you could hear the students around you gasping. Some of them were whispering something but since you still in nervous state, it feels like you couldn’t hear anything.

On the other hand, Luhan was trying to calm himself because of his friend’s action. His eyes were narrowing at the scene, waiting for the next happenings.

Just then, Kris stopped in front of you. You looked up at him with wide eyes, still confused.

Luhan have also his wide eyes.

He doesn’t want to see what’s going to happen next. He wanted to look away but his body wasn’t listening to him to do so.

Surprisingly, Kris continued walking as he passed by you. “I’ll choose Yuri.” he announced as he went up next to her which is behind you.

You sighed in relief, \*Thanks God!\* you were very thankful that Kris didn’t choose you or you have to be more extra careful around him.

Everyone gasped loudly because they all thought that Kris will going to choose you but he didn’t. He chose Yuri instead.

Yuri was happily beaming at Kris because of him choosing her. Well as for Yuri, any member of EXO that can be her partner will satisfy her but Kris was a jackpot for her.

“Thank you for choosing me.” Yuri beamed at Kris which made the other girl students get envious.

You chuckled by your friend’s reaction and shook your head, \*This girl really can’t hide her excitement and being a fangirl. Aigoo!\*

“Next will be Luhan.” the announcer suddenly said. Your smile faded away because of the mention of the next name.

You didn’t know why but you remained your head lowered, not wanting to look at him.

Without hesitation, Luhan approach you. “I’ll go with my bestfriend.” he said emphasizing the last word as his

arms were wrapped around your shoulder.

You looked up at him in surprise. It’s not that you’re not expecting him to choose you, it surprise you because he did it without any hesitation and he even made a body contact with you.

You don’t know if you’re going to be happy or not. For some reason, you felt unhappy because he put the word ‘bestfriend’ again. You did really hate that word now.

Everyone was shocked by Luhan’s sudden action. As for the history, Luhan wasn’t did that to any girl except now, with you. Now, they believed that you two were really close.

A big smirk was on Kris’ face at that moment as if he knows that this will go to happen.

“Next is Tao.” Tao then choose D.O. Then the announcer continued calling out the names.

You lightly pushed Luhan away by the awkward position the both of you have there. “Ohh.. mian.” You heard him apologized.

“You can choose without making a body contact. You’re just making things worst.” you muttered.

Luhan frowned at you, \*What does she mean by that?\* he asked himself.

After awhile, all the students are on their partners now.

“Listen, everyone. Please make a conversation with your partners first. The first activity



will be announcing after a few minutes. Please wait.” with that, the announcer left.

Everyone started talking to their partners now except you and Luhan. Only awkward silence was around the both of you.

There was a long pause until...

“Sooyoung...”

“Luhan...”

The both of you called at the same time.

## CHAPTER 40

“Sooyoung...”

“Luhan...”

The both of you called at the same time.

The both of you stared at each other.

The both of you met eyes.

Silence suddenly filled the atmosphere around the both of you.

“You go first..” you said, breaking the silence. There was a bit long pause before Luhan finally spoke.

He cleared his throat, “First of all, I’m sorry. I didn’t meant to do that. I was just being paranoid that time. I thought my mom did something bad to you. I just don’t want you to get hurt because of me. I can’t bare to

see that. I promise, I will never do such things like that anymore. I’m so sorry, I really am. Can you forgive me?”

For some reason, your heartbeat skipped a bit. Hearing those words from him, it was like he’s saying ‘I want to protect you’. Those words were sincere that you’ve couldn’t figure out what makes him to say that. His apology is making you confuse even more.

“Sooyoung-ah, can you forgive me?” Luhan repeated, making you back into reality. \*Can I really forgive him? But he did nothing to me, didn’t he?\* you thought.

“Luhan,” you started. Luhan gazed at you straight in the eyes, patiently waiting for you to continue. “I don’t think I can forgive you.” you said.

Luhan’s face fell. “First of all, you did nothing to me so you don’t need to apologize to me.” you trailed off. He stared at you, totally confused.

But then you continued, “Luhan, I’m not the right person that you need to apologize to. Your mom, she’s the one you need to ask for your apology. She’s the one you had curse and not me.”

“So.. If I did nothing to you, why are you ignoring me then?” he asked. That question actually made you stunned. It was unexpected question.

You looked away, “B-Because I don’t like what you just did to your mom last night.” you said. “So, you’re not going to ignore me right?” he asked.

You turned to him again only to

see his bright face. You could see that he was lightened up now. You frowned then shook your head, “No, you’re wrong.” you said and rolled your eyes.

“Eh? But you said I did nothing to you. You should stop ignoring me now.” he pouted. You raised an eyebrow, \*Did I just saw him pouted? Aigoo! So cute..\* you quickly shook that thought away and cleared your throat.

“You should apologize to your mom first. You should meet her and have a talk. I don’t want her to think that I’m bad because of what you did.” you said. Luhan went serious, “Are you saying that I need to go back to our place and apologize?”

“Exactly.” you replied. He raised an eyebrow, “Are you sure?” he then shrugged, “I don’t think mom take my words seriously.” he muttered.

You frowned, “What do you mean?” you asked in confusion. “I think mom didn’t even focus on what I’ve said last night. Believe me, she doesn’t.” he said.

You rolled your eyes, “Whatever! You’re still the cold-hearted Luhan I know after all.” you mumbled. “What did you say?” you heard him asked.

You didn’t reply and just continued on ignoring him. \*Aish! She starting to ignore me again..\* Luhan opened his mouth to say something but the announcer interrupted him.

“Everyone, please gather here again.”

After you heard it, you started

walking near at the announcer so you could clearly hear her. Still ignoring Luhan. With a pout, Luhan followed.

“So.. the first activity is ‘Look-for-a-Ring’ challenge.” the announcer announced. “LOOK-FOR-A-RING?!” everyone gasped.

“We prepared maps for all of you. We’ll give one for each partner. All you need to do is to find a one simple ring. It shows at the screen. Please take a look.” the announcer gestured.

All of you followed her point and saw a very simple gold ring at the screen.

“There are lots of ring in different places so all of you must go back here with at least one ring. Don’t worry, the maps will help you guys. Just follow what the map says. If any pair went back here without any ring, the pair need to take the punishment, araseo?”

“DAE!” all of you replied in unison.

“Okay. The activity is now starting!!”

---

“Where do you want to start?” Luhan approached you. “Don’t ask me. Just look at the map.” you bluntly replied. He made a face, “Psh! I was just seriously asking here.” he muttered. “My answer was serious too.” you muttered back.

“Yah, we’re partners here. Will you please stop make an argument with me and start performing the first activity instead?” he snapped.

“That’s what I’m doing right now. Let me see the map.” you said as you pulled out your hand. Luhan placed the map on it.

You scanned the map for a moment. “Let’s go here.” you said while pointing at the red point on the map where one of the rings located. Luhan followed your gesture and nodded. “Okay. I know that place. Come on.” he said as he started walking.

Since you not familiar in China, you let him lead the way and you just followed.

As the both of you were walking, Luhan suddenly spoke. “Are you sure you wanted to go on that place?” he asked.

You nodded. “That place was a bit far from here.” he muttered. You turned to him, “Mwo? What did you said it just now? We’re almost walking about an hour already!” you hissed.

Luhan shrugged, “You didn’t ask me.” You rolled your eyes, “Whatever! So, how many hours will it take if we continue to walk?” you asked.

“Depends.” you heard him said. “Depends on what?” you asked, a bit annoyed. “Depends on our speed of walking.” he said. You raised an eyebrow, “Just tell me how many hours will it take?” you asked, irritated.

“3 hours?” he replied with a questioning tone. Your eyes widen, “Mwo?! Why didn’t you tell me earlier?!” you hissed.

Luhan shrugged again, “You didn’t ask me.” he said that

words again. “Come on, let’s take a bus to go there.” you said.

“I don’t have my wallet on me today.” he snapped. “Mwo? Let’s just use mine then.” you said.

Luhan held a hand, “Korean money isn’t working here, remember?” he reminded. “Ohhh.. I forgot!” you gasped. “I bet the other students having problems with money too.” he said.

“Let’s change the place then. Let’s go to the near place instead.” you said. Luhan shook his head, “No, we can’t. I bet everyone were going there also because of money problems. Since we’re already here. Let’s just go on that place you chose.” he snapped.

\*He’s right.\*

You nodded, “Okay. I guess I don’t have a choice.” you said. “Okay. Let’s go.”

You nodded once again and with that, the both of you continued walking again.

---

“Ow, ow!” you winced. Luhan looked at you worriedly, “What happen?” he asked. “Can we stop on walking first? My feet were aching.” you explained.

“It’s okay with me but are you okay if we lose this first activity?” he asked with concern.

\*If we lose? But I don’t want to get any punishment..\* you shook your head, “I don’t want to lose. Let us continue.” you stood up again but, “Ow!” you

wincing again and was about to lose your balance.

Luckily, Luhan caught you in time. "Let's go there." he gestured the near bench. "Sit here first. I'll go by myself to look for the ring. Just wait for me here, araseo?" he said.

"Eh? You're going alone?" you asked. He nodded, "I can take care of myself. It was easy for me since I'm already used to this place. Just wait for me here and I'll be right back." he said.

You pointed a finger to him, "You! Make sure that you have the ring with you when you come back, araseo?" you said. Luhan chuckled and nodded, "I will but make sure to wait for me." he said. You rolled your eyes, "I'll wait." you said. Luhan smiled then walked away.

---

Luhan continued searching for the ring and since you're nit around him, he started to run for it. Since he was used to this place, he quickly found the ring that fast.

He smiled, "Gotcha!" he was about to go back when he suddenly heard someone scream. A scream of a girl.

"**Help!!!!**" the girl screamed. Luhan turned to the place where the voice came from. He saw the girl screaming 'help' and looking at the man who is running away from him.

Luhan ignored it and started to walk back to you. "**Help me! The thief stole my bag!!!**" the girl screamed once again that made Luhan stopped.

He closed his eyes, \*Aish! Sooyoung, just wait for me a little while.\* with that, Luhan placed the ring on his finger then turned around and started running after the thief.

"**Hold up!**" he shouted at the thief. The thief ignored him and just continued running. Luhan run as fast as he could until he catch up the thief. "**Give me that bag!**" he hissed.

The man smirked, "**Sorry but I got it first. Go and find one for yourself.**" he said as he shove Luhan's arm off of him and continued running again but Luhan caught his arm that made the man looked back at him.

"**Yah, what's your problem? Just leave this bag to me! It's not yours anyways.**" the man said. "**Yeah. That bag is not mine but it isn't yours either. Give it back to the owner now.**" Luhan hissed.

"Who are you to order me?!" the man asked angrily. "No one." Luhan simply replied. "**Just mind your own business then kid!**" the man was about to runaway again but Luhan geld him back.

"**If my words were hard to understand, then my fist will make you understand it.**" the man was about to punch Luhan but luckily, Luhan grabbed it immediately that made him stopped on doing so. Instead, Luhan punched him, HARD. Then the man fall on the ground.

"**I think you're the one who can't understand.**" Luhan said as he bent down to get the bag on the man but the man held it tightly. "**Still don't understand?**" Luhan punched him once more and finally got

the bag from the thief.

"**Do you still want me to punch you huh?**" Luhan threatened. The thief shook his head and quickly runaway. Luhan smirked then sigh.

He turned around and walked towards the girl. "**Here's your bag.**" Luhan handed the bag to her. The girl took it and bowed, "**Xie xie.**"

"**No problem. Be careful next time.**" with that said, Luhan started to walk. "**Wait!**" the girl said that made Luhan looked back at her.

"**You saved my bag and as for return, I want to treat you.**" she said. "**I'm sorry but someone is waiting for me.**" with that said, Luhan completely disappeared from the sight.

The girl watched him walked away with admiration.

---

"Aish! Where is he? What take him so long?" you mumbled while waiting for Luhan. Suddenly, you saw a figure running towards your direction. It was Luhan.

"What take you so long? It almost late, you know that?!" you hissed. "Sorry but I saw a girl got troubled so I helped her." he said between panting. You rolled your eyes, "As if I believe you for that. You hate girls so that was impossible." you muttered.

Luhan frowned, "But that's true." he said. "Whatever! Where's the ring?" you asked. He held a hand up, "Here."

You saw the ring in one of his finger. You smiled, "Good. Let's go back." you said as you stood up, "Ow!" your feet was still a bit in pain.

Luhan grabbed your arm, "Get on." he said while gesturing his back. "Eh?!" you gasped. Instead of giving you a reply, he pulled you to him that made you hopped on his back.

The next thing you know, Luhan was already giving you a piggy back ride on the way back to the dorms. You couldn't help but smiled.

\*He's now starting to warm..\*

## CHAPTER 41

"Put me down." you said just when you saw the gate near the both of you. It made Luhan stopped, "Eh?!"

"I said put me down." you repeated. "No, I won't let you walk in this kind of condition." he snapped as he continued walking.

"Yah, I said put me down. I don't want everyone to see us like this." you muttered. Luhan stopped once again.

Slowly, he turned to you. "Why you don't want everyone to see us like this?" he asked softly.

You looked away, not wanting to meet his gaze. "I-I just don't want them to think something's fishy between the two of us." you muttered.

After that, you felt his gaze went back in front. He sighed, "Don't worry. Everyone knows already that we're bestfriends. They won't think anything far about that anymore." he said.

\*He's right! Everyone knows that we're bestfriends. What makes me think that they will think something far aside of that?\* you mentally shook that thought. You heaved a sigh.

"Shall I continue walking now? It's getting late, you know." he said. You nodded, "Go on."

With that, Luhan continued walking until the both of you reached the hall.

'Woah' 'Wooo' and 'Yiiee' could be heard from the students as loong as the both of you entered the place. You could also see a smile suddenly crept on the announcer's face while looking at the both of you.

"Luhan, you can put me down now." you whispered to him as you bit your bottom lip but he just ignored you and looked at the announcer.

"What happened to the both of you? Mr. Lu, why are you carrying her? Did the both of you got in trouble? Did the both of you get at least one ring?" the announcer asked continuously.

Luhan didn't speak instead he raised his left hand only for everyone to see the ring on one of his fingers. "I'll give the ring back later. For now, I need to bring my partner to her dorm." he didn't let the announcer to speak and just left then bring you to your dorm.

Kris amusedly smiled at the scene with a light smirk.

---

As both you and Luhan entered your room. Luhan gently laid you on your bed. He gazed at your feet, "Is it still in pain?" he asked worriedly.

"I think it's not anymore. I can take care of myself. Just go back there and give back the ring." you replied. Without a word, Luhan left your room.

You frowned, \*He just left without saying a word? What the?! I thought he's not the old Luhan anymore.. I guess I'm wrong.\*

After some moments, Luhan came back with something along him. Just then, you noticed that he was holding a pain killer.

"Luhan? I thought you left already?" you asked. He didn't reply instead he carefully sat on the edge of your bed as he reached out your feet. He gently massaged it with a pain killer on it.

"Tell me if it is hurting." he said. You remained silent and let him be. Actually, you were softened by his actions. He looks really worried right now but why?

\*What are you doing Luhan? You're making things get worse..\* you thought, a bit afraid on what will going to happen in the future.

"Sorry.." Luhan suddenly whispered. You peeked on him, "Eh?!" you gasped.

Luhan was still focusing on your

feet as he said, "Sorry for what I've done. Sorry for what I did to mom in front of you. Sorry if because of me, you feel pain on your feet. And sorry if I makes you wait for me just now." he stopped and gazed at you, "Sooyoung, I really am sorry.." he softly said.

With that voice of him, you could feel the sincerity from it. He was sincere of apologizing to you. Thought for some reason, you couldn't say a word and just let your mouth shut.

Silence filled the atmosphere. You then suddenly heard him sighed. He carefully placed your feet back flatted on the bed and stood up. "I'm going now. Take a good rest. Goodnight." with that, Luhan completely disappeared from your sight.

All you can do was watched him walked away without saying any words.

---

Morning fast came. It was actually a free day for all the students since the activity yesterday was a bit too hard that made some students got tired.

And since it's free day, you let yourself take a rest for a long time. You didn't bothered yourself to wake up early and so did your friends.

Suddenly, you felt someone shook you. "Wake up." you heard a voice said. All you just did was groaned and kicked the person off from your bed. "Let me sleep for the whole day."

"Ow!" the voice winced in pain. \*That voice. That was very familiar to me. No, it can't be...\*

you slowly opened your eyes and to your shock, you saw Luhan on the floor while rubbing his butt.

Your eyes widen, "What the hell are you doing here?!" you screamed. "I was just trying to wake you up." he said, still rubbing his butt.

"Who let you enter my room?" you asked. "Your friends." he said. "Mwo? Where are they?" you asked once more. "They already leave." he replied simply.

You frowned, "They leave without me?" you whispered in disbelief. "They told me that you don't to go with them that's why they didn't bothered to wake you up." he explained.

\*Oh yeah. I remembered they asked me last night about this. Good thing, I remembered..\*

Luhan carefully stood up, "I didn't know you were good at kicking someone." he said. You glared at him, "You!" you pointed at his face, "Get out! I want to continue my sleep!" you hissed.

Luhan simply shook his head, "No. Get up now and get ready." he ordered. You raised an eyebrow, "Eh? Get ready for what?!"

"We're going out." he said. "Mwo?! Where are we going?!" \*Is he trying to ask me to go on a date with him?\*" you thought.

He frowned, "Just follow what I've said. Palli! I'll tell you afterwards. Make it faster. I'll just wait for you outside." with that said, Luhan left your room.

You made face, \*What's exactly going on? Aish! I don't understand him!\*" you screamed on your head. Annoyed, you got up from your bed and followed his orders.

Hour later, you were already done. You carefully stepped out from your room only to see Luhan at the living room. As the time he saw you, he immediately stood up and started walking towards the main door.

"Wait, aren't we going to eat first before we leave?" you snapped. Luhan stopped on it and turned to face you. He shook his head, "No, we're going to eat breakfast there." he said then exited the dorm.

With a frowned, you followed. "Luhan, where exactly you're going to take me to?" you asked as you stepped out the dorm.

"We're going to our house. Come on, don't waste the time." he simply replied then he started walking away.

You froze.

## CHAPTER 42

"Mwo?! OUR house?!" you gasped. Luhan stopped and faced you. "We're going to my parents' place." he replied normally.

\*Right! What was I'm thinking? Babo Sooyoung!\*" you mentally cursed. You fake a smile. "Hehe."



Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Are you thinking anything else?” he asked. You quickly shook your head, “Ani.”

Luhan nodded, “Okay, let’s go.” he said and turned around again. “Wait Luhan.” You called that made him stopped again and looked back at you.

“Umm.. what are we going to do there?” you asked slowly. “You’ll see. Just go with me.” he said then walked away.

Still, you were right there on your position. You were confused by Luhan’s actions these past few days. He was acting very sweet and gentle lately. You were trying to think what’s on Luhan’s mind but seems like your mind wasn’t functioning. You wanted to follow him but your body wasn’t moving.

Luhan noticed that you’re not following him so he stopped and faced you again. “Are you going to follow me by your own or do you want me to drag you along with me by holding your hand?” he asked.

His words made you back into your senses. “Eh?!” you gasped. Instead of giving you an answer, Luhan walked towards you and took your hand instead. “I guess you need my company.” with that said, Luhan started walking again along with you while holding your hand.

“I can go without you holding my hand.” you tried to to escape by his grip but he didn’t let you instead he held your hand tightly. Luhan turned to you, “I know but I insist.” he then continued to walking, still

holding your hand.

You stared at Luhan for a moment as your body didn’t hesitate to follow him. Your gaze fell down to your hand that Luhan was holding right now. A smile suddenly crept on your face without you knowing it.

\*Until now, I don’t know what my real feeling for this cold-hearted monster jerk that was holding my hand though I don’t want to know yet. I was afraid that this feeling is going to give me pain. All I know at this moment is I’m happy. I’m happy on what’s happening right now. Aside of that, I don’t want to think anymore.\* you thought.

Both you and Luhan hoped on a bus on the way to Lu’s Mansion. Luhan finally released your hand so you can enter the bus first. For some reason, you felt disappointed and empty. You just shrugged your feelings off and just hoped inside the bus.

You chose the seat at the end of the bus and comfortably sat there. Surprisingly, Luhan sat beside you. You gave him a confused look. Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Wae?” he asked.

“N-Nothing.” you replied then turned to face the window. Because of Luhan’s presence beside you, you started to feel uneasy inside your bus and right on your place. It feels like you started to have a problem on moving your body. It feels like you were a frozen ice that cannot move.

At last, the bus finally stopped after some minutes of riding. Both of you hoped off the bus and started walking again on the way to Lu’s Mansion.

After few minutes, both you and Luhan finally arrived at the place. You glanced at Luhan who was ringing the door bell. \*I wonder what is he thinking right now? And why did he bring me here?\*

Just then, the door slowly opened. A maid greeted, “**Ni Hao Master Luhan. Welcome back.**”

Luhan just gave her a nod as an exchanged. With that, the maid let the two of you enter the house. Both of you sat on the couch at the living room.

“**Where’s mom and dad?**” Luhan asked the maid. “**They’re upstairs. Please wait here, I’ll call them.**” The maid said then left.

You turned to Luhan, “What exactly you’re thinking Luhan?” you asked. “Try to think of it on your own.” that was his answer that made you more curious. You frowned and were about to ask him once more but Mr. and Mrs. Lu suddenly went downstairs.

Both you and Luhan automatically stood up and bowed.

“**Oh, Luhan what brings you here?**” then Mrs. Lu noticed you, “**And you bring Sooyoung too?**”

Luhan glanced at you, “**Yeah. She’s actually mad at me because of what I did to you 2 days ago.**” he said. You looked at Luhan in surprise.

Luhan faced his parents. “**Mom, dad, I’m here to apologize.**” He said. Your eyes widen after

hearing those words from Luhan. Also, his parents were confused. You could see it on their expressions.

Luhan continued, **“Mom, sorry if I accused you that you’re only gonna hurt Sooyoung. I was very worried that time that’s why I didn’t think before making a move. What I’ve told you on that night was all because of my emotion and I didn’t mean to say those words to you mom.”** he lowered his head, **“You know, you’re the only girl I’m close to. I don’t want you to misunderstand what I’ve said that night. You’re important to me mom, you know that.”**

Mrs. Lu smiled, **“I know.”**

Luhan looked up to his mom, **“Mom, can you forgive me and accept my apology?”** he glanced at you, **“This girl beside will get mad at me forever if I failed on apologizing to you and I don’t like that to happen.”** he softly stated.

Your heartbeat started to beat faster after hearing those words from Luhan. You could see the sincerity on his face.

Mrs. Lu chuckled, **“I see you’re doing this because of her not me.”** she muttered. Luhan looked at her mom in shock, **“Mom...”** he whispered.

Mrs. Lu chuckled again, **“But I’m accepting your apology.”** she said. **“Eh?!”** Luhan gasped.

Instead of answering him, Mrs. Lu walked towards you then took both of your hands. **“Don’t be mad at my son anymore or he will die of emptiness.”** she

said and smiled.

**“Mom!”** Luhan hissed as his face turned red. This time, Mr. Lu chuckled. **“I can’t believe I’m seeing my son grew up now. I’m happy to know that.”** He stated.

**“You too, dad?!”** Luhan hissed. Mr. Lu looked at you, **“You know what? You’re the only girl that Luhan bring here and I could see that you’re important to my son. Don’t get mad at him anymore. I understand him. He only did that to her mom because he’s worried about you.”** he said.

\*Err? I know I’m not a dumb but I don’t understand a thing seriously..\* you thought.

**“Mom, Dad!”** Luhan’s face was heating right now because of embarrassment. Both his parents chuckled because of his reaction. Mr. Lu patted his back then whispered, **“I’m proud of you. Now, make a first move.”**

Luhan stared at his dad in disbelief. Mr. Lu only smiled at his son.

**“Are you two going to eat with us and sleep over tonight?”** Mrs. Lu asked. **“Oh! That’s a good idea.”** Mr. Lu agreed as he winked at Luhan.

Luhan rolled his eyes. **“We’re sorry but we have to go now. But before that,”** he looked at his parents then continued, **“Please accept my apology.”** He said and bowed.

Mr. and Mrs. Lu laugh at the same time. Luhan looked up and tilted his head in confusion. **“Ask the girl with you. If she said yes or no, then that’s our**

**answer.”** Mrs. Lu said as she glanced at you.

**“M-Me?!”** you gasped while pointing at yourself. Luhan’s parents both nodded.

You looked at Luhan who was already looking at you. **“Err. I don’t think I’m the right person who need to accept your apology because you did nothing to me on the first place.”** You explained.

Mr. Lu clapped, **“Okay. Let’s rephrase it then. Sooyoung, are you willing to not ignore him again?”** he asked.

You made a long pause.

Luhan was straightly looking at you. He was a bit annoyed of his dad but in this question, he badly wants to know your answer.

\*Aigoo.. what am I suppose to answer for that question?\*

**“Umm.. Honestly, I’m not ignoring him and I’m not mad at him either.”** You replied honestly.

Your answer was very simple but it made Luhan smiled.

**“Look, he’s happy to hear your answer. So, I guess apology accepted!”** Mrs. Lu said with a giggle.

You looked at Luhan but he immediately stopped himself from smiling. Luhan cleared his throat, **“We have to go now.”** he took your hand that made you shiver through your spine because of his touch.

Luhan bowed and so did you before the both of you

completely exited the mansion.

Mr. and Mrs. Lu glaced at each other then smiled.

---

“Wait Luhan! This is not the way on going back to the dorm.” You said when you realized that Luhan was dragging you to the different way. This isn’t the way that the both of you went on the way to the way to the mansion earlier.

Luhan didn’t speak and just continued dragging you along with him, still holding your hand but it was very tight.

You suddenly stopped that made him stopped also. He looked back at you. You were lowering your head, “You’re hurting me.” you whispered.

Luhan gazed down on the both of your hands. Slowly, he released your hand, “Mianhe. I didn’t mean to hurt you.” He softly said.

You gently rubbed your hand and didn’t speak. Just then, Luhan carefully took your hand. You look up at him.

He was gazing at your hand worriedly. “Mianhe. I’m really sorry.” he whispered.

\*Okay. Awkward?\* you thought.

“No need to be sorry. I’m alright anyways. But where are we going?” you asked.

Luhan looked at you, “I’ll tour you with some beautiful places here in China.” He smiled and gently took your hand.

“I can hold your hand like this, right?” he asked.

\*OHMYGOSH! Luhan, why are you doing this to me? Why are you so sweet all of a sudden? Oh please.. don’t make me...\*

You end up nodding at him.

Again, Luhan smiled. \*Seriously Luhan? What happen to you? What happen to the cold-hearted Luhan that I know? The monster-jerk I know? You’re making me more confuse about my feelings because of what you’re doing right now. You know that Luhan?\* Of course, you didn’t say that. Only your mind knows it.

You couldn’t help it but smiled.

## CHAPTER 43

A car suddenly stopped in front you and Luhan that made the both of you stopped on walking. Still, Luhan was holding your hand and it made you feel warm by his touch.

Suddenly, an old man stepped out from the car.

“**Who are you?**” Luhan immediately asked as he stepped in front of you for safety.

\*Is he a kidnapper? Oh no. Please no. I don’t want to die yet. I still want to—\* your thoughts was interrupted when you saw the old man bowed at the two of you. You raised an eyebrow, \*Okay? What is he doing?\*

“**Young master and Miss, please get in. I will be your driver for today.**” the man politely said.

You looked up at Luhan only to see him raising an eyebrow. “**What are you talking about?**” he asked confused.

“**Young master, your parents ordered me to give both of you a ride.**” the man muttered. “**No need for that. We’re not going back to the dorm anyways.**” Luhan said.

“**Your parents were right! You’re going to tour this girl around here.**” the man commented. “**Excuse me?**” Luhan raised an eyebrow.

“**Your parents told me that the both of you need a ride to wherever you two going.**”

“**And so? We don’t need you.**”

“**I know.**”

“**What?!**” Luhan frowned.

The man pulled out something on his pocket. It was a key. He handed it to Luhan, “**Here..**”

Luhan titled his head, “**What’s that?**”

“**A key for happiness.**”

“**What?!**”

The man chuckled. He took Luhan’s hand and placed the key on his palm. “**If you want to enjoy this day with this beautiful girl, accept this key to use the car. I’m leaving now. Please enjoy your day together Young master and**

Miss.” with that, the old man left the both of you dumbfounded.

Luhan’s gaze followed the man’s direction then went down to the key on his palm.  
\*Seriously? My parents? Aish! They won’t stop teasing me.\*

You looked up at Luhan only to see him staring at the key. “Your parents send us a car?” you asked.

He nodded, “Yeah. I think so.”

“I think that’s a good idea. I don’t want to walk any longer or my feet will hurt again. Come on, let’s just use the car.” you suggested.

Luhan nodded, “Okay. Let’s use it!” he then opened the car for you. You smiled, “You’re being gentleman nowadays. I’m glad and thanks for opening the car for me. I think I like the new Luhan.” you commented before hopped inside the car.

“Eh?!”

“Come on. Don’t waste the time.” you snapped, pointed at your wrist watch. “Right!” with that, Luhan closed the door for you then went to driver’s seat.

*You’re being gentleman nowadays. I’m glad and thanks for opening the car for me. I think I like the new Luhan.*

*You’re being gentleman nowadays. I’m glad and thanks for opening the car for me. I think I like the new Luhan.*

*You’re being gentleman nowadays. I’m glad and thanks for opening the car for me. I think I like the new Luhan.*

Your words kept playing on Luhan’s head that made him smiled even wider. Your eyes immediately caught it. “You’re even smiling now. I like to see your progress. I think we need to jump for the next step now.” you said.

Luhan turned to you, “Next step?” he ignored your first sentence because the last words you had said really caught his attention.

“I’ll tell you after this trip. For now, let’s enjoy ourselves first.” you said.

Luhan was curious about the next step that you were talking about but he chose to not to ask you anymore. He will just wait until this trip will end like what you’ve said.

With that, Luhan start the engine then drove off.

---

Luhan toured you around the town. It was a simple place but this is one of the special for you now. Not because this is the first place you explore in this country but because you’re happy right now.

Another reason is because of Luhan. He’s being different now from old Luhan you know before. From cold-hearted person to warm and gentle person. Yes, that’s the new Luhan.

The both of you also ate lunch there together then continued exploring the place again.

While the both of you walking around the town, two figures

suddenly caught your eyes. Still, you continued walking but then stopped halfway.

You turned to the figures again. Your eyes widen after seeing one of your friends, it was Yoona. The more that shock you is, she was with Kai.

You tugged at Luhan’s shirt. It made Luhan stopped, “Wae?”

“Look.” you said while pointing at Yoona’s and Kai’s direction. Luhan followed your point, “Wait, isn’t that Kai and your friend?” he asked.

You nodded. “So?” you heard him asked without interest. You looked at him then rolled your eyes, “Aish! Come on, let’s follow them.” you said and was about to go but Luhan caught your wrist.

You stopped and looked back him, “What?” you asked, a little bit irritated. “If we’re going to follow them, do you we can enjoy this day?” he asked.

You made a paused on it. \*Enjoy this day?\* “You’re right! Let’s not follow those two then. Let’s just go to our own way.” you said.

After hearing your words, Luhan finally let go your wrist. He let out a sigh, “Good. Let’s go.”

The both of you started walking again until you tugged on his shirt again. “What now?” Luhan irritated asked as he turned to you. You wasn’t looking at him but to different direction. “Buy me an ice cream.” you said.

Luhan followed your gaze only to see you staring at the Ice Cream Parlor. “Wait, what are

you? A kid?" he asked in annoyed tone.

You pouted, "Psh! I thought you've changed already. I guess I'm wrong." you said then walked passed by him.

Luhan watched you walked away then sighed. He then went to Ice Cream Parlor to buy ice cream.

On the other hand, you kept on walking but suddenly stopped. You looked back. Luhan is nowhere to be seen. You frowned, \*Where did he go? Did he leave me? Or did I leave him?\*

Your eyes widen in horror, \*Omo! How should I go back to the dorm? I'm not familiar with this place..\*

Suddenly, a familiar figure caught your eyes. It was Luhan running towards you with 2 ice creams on the both of his hands.

"Here's your ice cream." he said as he handed one of the ice creams to you. You smiled, "How sweet of you Luhan." you commented before getting the ice cream from his hand.

Luhan rolled his eyes, "I'm only sweet because I bought you ice cream. Tsk!"

You chuckled. "If I know, you want ice cream too." you said then licked your ice cream. "No, I don't." he snapped.

"Tell that to the ice cream that you was holding right now." you said then turned around to walk again. Luhan slowly gazd down to the ice cream on hand.

"Now, you realized." you said

while your back facing him. Instead of defending himself, Luhan just smiled. A smile with happiness.

With that, the both of you continued walking again. Until suddenly, you tugged on Luhan's shirt for the 3rd time.

"What?" he asked with a frown.

You smiled, "Gomawo." Luhan titled his head in surprised but then you continued,

"Thank you for giving me a tour in this place. Thank you for the ice cream also. I really enjoyed your company. To be honest, I don't really like you because you're only being rude around me. But now, I'm more than willing to be your friend. You're not that bad that I know before. I'm glad you've changed. So... Friends?" you offered your hand for a handshake.

Luhan stared your hand for a moment, "I don't like to be your friend." he said.

You stared him, "Eh?"

He looked away, "We're already bestfriends so no need to ask me to be your friend." he said. You made a pause but then smiled, "Okay then! We're now officially bestfriends!" you beamed.

Luhan rolled his eyes, "You looks like a kid." he commented. You pouted, "I know I'm cute." you said.

"What?" he gasped. You chuckled, "Nothing! Come on, let's go there." you beamed as you dragged him inside the shop of full of stuff toys.

"Woah! Luhan, look. A deer!" your eyes rounded as you took the deer stuff toy. Luhan raised an eyebrow, "So?"

"Tsk! What I mean is, this is you." you muttered. "What? I'm a toy? And deer?" he asked in annoyed tone. You rolled your eyes, "You still didn't get it. Just go and buy this for me." you said.

"Mwo? Why me? Just buy it by yourself!" he said. "Psh! I don't have money for this country so at least buy this one for me today. I'll pay it later." you said.

Luhan only raised an eyebrow. You rolled your eyes, "Whatever! Let's just go back to the dorm. It's getting late now." you said then walk passed by him.

Luhan watched you walked away then gaze down to the stuff toy.

---

"Aish! Didn't he get what I mean? I want that stuff toy because it reminds me of him. Duh? Tsk! I can't believe he was dumb to not to notice that. Aish!" you started mumbling to yourself as you keeps on walking.

"Sooyoung!"

\*Eh?!\* you stopped as you heard someone called you. You looked back only to see Luhan running to you. "Why did you leave me like that?" he hissed.

You rolled your eyes, "I want to go back now." you then turned around again.

"Wait!" you heard him called.



You rolled your eyes but then turned back to face him, “What no—” your words were cut off as the deer stuff toy greeted you.

Luhan lightly put it down for you to see his face, “Take this.” he said. You only stared at him, still in surprise.

Luhan rolled his eyes, “Are you going to take this or not? I’ll throw it then.”

“Wait no! I’ll take it.” you snapped as you immediately took it from him. “**Xie xie Lulu.**” you said and smiled.

“Mwo? Lulu?” he asked in disbelief. “Oh! I mean Luhan. Lulu is name of this deer.” you explained. “Tsk! Come on, we still have to return the car to my parents.” he said then started to walk.

You followed, “Luhan, why did you bought this for me?”

“Because you said you like it and that’s not free. You’re going to pay for it when we get back to the dorm.” he said.

You pouted, “Okay. Okay.”  
\*Psh! I thought you already realize what I mean...\*

## CHAPTER 44

The car finally stopped as Luhan parked it at the parkong lot inside the Lu’s place.

You were about to exit the car when Luhan suddenly stopped you by grabbing your wrist. You confusedly looked at him and

before you could ask him, he already spoke.

“Let me open the door for you.”

“Eh?!”

Luhan didn’t gave you a response instead he stepped out from the car and carefully open the door beside you. You only stared at him, still confused by his actions.

“How long do you want to stay there?” he asked that made you snapped out your daze. “Uh-oh..”

You then went out from the car. \*Aigoo! He’s really weird today but I guess this is a sign of my success!\*

Both you and Luhan entered the mansion to give back the key to his parents.

“**Oh, the two of you finally came back!**” that was greeted by Mrs. Lu as the both of you stepped inside the mansion.

You saw Luhan rolled his eyes. You elbowed him, “Be good.” you whispered. He made a face.

You smiled to the Lu’s then bowed, “**Good evening Mr. and Mrs. Lu.**” you politely greeted. They both smiled at you.

“**Here..**” Luhan handed the car key to them. Mr. Lu took it. “**Did you two enjoyed your day together?**” he asked.

You looked up at Luhan but he was only looking back at you. You faced his parents then smiled, “**We did enjoyed. I never thought China is such a beautiful place.**”

“**I’m glad you did enjoyed the place. How about you my son?**” Mr. Lu gave Luhan a one unreadable smile.

You turned to Luhan to see his reaction but he only looked away. You frowned, \*What’s up to him?\*

“**I think the both of you are hungry now. Come on, I prepared dinner for us.**” Mrs. Lu stated.

“**No thanks. We’re about to leave anyways.**” Luhan said as he grabbed your wrist and was about to leave the mansion when Mrs. Lu spoke again.

“**I’ve already told them that the both of you will stay here tonight. They already closed the gates so you don’t have a choice but to stay here.**” Mrs. Lu snapped.

Luhan stared at his mom in disbelief. “**What?! Why did you do that?!**” he hissed. “**Because I want you to stay here. I miss you my son.**”

You could see how longing Mrs. Lu is for Luhan. You looked up at Luhan, “**Let’s stay.**”

Luhan stared at you in surprise. “It’s only for one night. It doesn’t make you die, right?”

Luhan sighed, “**Okay, we’re going to stay.**” Mrs. Lu brightened, “**Thank you my son.**”

“**Thank her and not me.**” Luhan said, gesturing your way. Mrs. Lu smiled at you, “**Xie xie.**”

You shook your head, “**I did**

nothing.”

“Psh! Come on, I’m hungry.”  
Luhan snapped. Mr. Lu  
chuckled, “Okay, let’s go and  
eat.”

With that, the 4 of you headed to  
the dining area to eat dinner.

---

“Luhan, eat this.”

“You too, eat this Sooyoung.”

Both Mr. and Mrs. Lu treat the  
both of you warmly. It was like  
they’re being parents to you  
which is making you happy.  
Because of this, you suddenly  
missed your parents from the  
province. Well, you know that  
they’re happy that you’re doing  
better on your study so you just  
tried your best to understand  
your situation. You will see  
them on summer anyways.

With that, all of you started your  
foods. The dinner was silent  
until Mr. Lu spoke.

“The room was already  
prepared. You two can stay in  
one room, right?”

That question made both you  
and Luhan choked on your  
foods.

“Oh My! Sooyoung, Luhan,  
drink water!” Mrs. Lu said in  
panic. Both you and Luhan did.

“Wait dad, what are you  
saying?” Luhan hissed. Mr. Lu  
chuckled, “I was just kidding.  
What I mean is, both of your  
rooms will next to each other.”  
he explained.

Mrs. Lu giggled, “You two

looks good together. Am I  
right honey? They look so cute  
when they choke at the same  
time.” she commented.

Mr. Lu nodded, “You’re right  
honey!”

“Mom, Dad!” Luhan hissed in  
annoyance.

Mr. Lu chuckled, “Look at our  
son, he’s face was red like  
tomato.” he teased with a grin.

You turned to Luhan and to your  
surprise, what Mr. Lu had said  
was true. It looks like Luhan is  
blushing. \*Aigoo! So cute~\*

Luhan lowered his head, “Let’s  
just continue our food so we  
can go to bed after.” he  
muttered. You smiled at his  
action but then continued your  
food as he told.

Mr. and Mrs. Lu glanced at each  
other with a smile before they  
continued their food.

---

“Good night Mr. and Mrs.  
Lu.” you said. They smiled at  
you, “Good night.”

Luhan was about to go upstairs  
but you stopped him by  
grabbing his arm. “At least say  
good night to them, you  
know.”

He let out a sigh then faced his  
parents. “Good night.” You  
smiled, “Good boy.” He only  
rolled his eyes.

“Where’s my good night  
kiss?” Mrs. Lu whined.  
“Mom!”

Mrs. Lu pouted. You elbowed

Luhan, “You don’t know how  
long your mom miss you. At  
least obey him for tonight.” you  
whispered. “Mwo?”

You rolled your eyes, “Aish!  
Just go and give her a good  
night kiss. It won’t hurt, okay.”  
you then lightly pushed him to  
his mom.

Without a choice, Luhan gave  
his mom a kiss on the cheek.  
Mrs. Lu smiled, “Good night  
baby.”

“Mom, I’m not your baby  
anymore.” he hissed.

Mrs. Lu only giggled.

With that, all you went to your  
respective rooms to take a rest  
and sleep.

---

Luhan was already lying on his  
bed, staring at the ceiling. He  
tried to sleep but he couldn’t. He  
sat up, “Aish! Why is it so hard  
to sleep tonight?!”

He then got off from the bed and  
exited his room.

On the other hand, you were  
also lying on the bed but like  
Luhan, you couldn’t sleep also.  
You took the deer stuff toy  
beside you and stared on it.

“Hi Lulu!” you smiled. “I guess  
I need to go outside. I can’t  
sleep..” you mumbled then made  
your way to exit the room with  
your stuff toy.

When you stepped out from the  
room, you saw Luhan stepped  
out from his room at the same  
time as you.

The both of you stared at each other for a moment. But then you spoke the broke the silent atmosphere.

“Hello Luhan!” you smiled as you waved the deer stuff toy to him. “Oh, you’re holding that stuff toy I gave to you.” he said.

You gaze down at the stuff toy then looked back him with a frown, “You didn’t gave this to me. I’m going to pay this, remember?” you reminded.

Luhan raised an eyebrow then shrugged, “You haven’t paid it yet so as of now, I can still say that I gave you that stuff toy.” he said then started to walk.

You followed him, “Where are you going?” you asked. “In the living room.” he said as he started to go downstairs.

“Aren’t you going to sleep?” you asked. “I couldn’t sleep. How about you?”

“We’re the same. I couldn’t sleep also.”

This time, the both of you already sitting at the couch in the living room. Only silence filled the atmosphere between you and Luhan. He was only staring from somewhere as you played with your stuff toy.

“Why deer?” Luhan finally spoke, breaking the silence.

You turned to him, “Eh?!”

“Of all the stuff toys there, why did you like deer the most?” he asked. You paused then replied him a question, “Before I answer that, can I ask you something?”

He just nodded.

“Do you know the meaning of your name?” you asked. He simply shook his head.

“Well, the answer for your question is, I chose deer because this remind me of someone.” you stated. “Who?” he asked with curiosity.

You smiled and stood up, “I need to sleep now. You too.” with that, you started to walk. Confused, Luhan only watched you walk away but you suddenly stopped halfway though you didn’t looked back. Your back was only one facing him.

And then you spoke, “Try to search for the meaning of your name. Everyone’s names have different meanings so try to know yours. Good night.” with that, you finally went upstairs then entered your room.

## CHAPTER 45

It’s been already a week had passed after that night. Both you and Luhan become more closer to each other. The bestfriend thingy between the both of you slowly becoming real.

All the activities are now finished. Of course, you did enjoyed it a lot. Not because it’s your first time joining the school trip but also because Luhan is now your friend or bestfriend. Also, you met his parents which are very kind to you.

It’s now time to leave China and go back to Korea. You bid your

goodbye to Mr. and Mrs. Lu before you completely enter the plane as well as Luhan.

About your friends, they kept asking you but you always tell them that it’s a part of the dare but even though yourself, you know it’s not.

About Luhan’s friends, they didn’t budge to ask since they think it’s normal for the bestfriends relation though Kris always keep his eyes on them secretly.

After saying goodbye to Mr. and Mrs. Lu, both you and Luhan entered the plane.

As expected, Luhan sat next to you. You were seating beside the window for you to see the view outside. You were amusedly gazing the window while smiling.

“Did you enjoy our trip?” Luhan suddenly asked. You turned to him and nodded, “I did enjoyed it, a lot.” you smiled.

“Also, Lulu enjoyed it too.” you added as you waved the stuff toy that you were holding. Luhan rolled his eyes, “We’re now going back to Korea yet you still didn’t pay that.”

“Psh! You said I don’t have to pay this to you anymore and now you’re whining because I didn’t pay this? Aish! Okay, I’m going to pay it now.” you were about to get your wallet when Luhan spoke.

“No need for that. I was just kidding!” You looked up at him and just stared. Luhan raised an eyebrow, “Wae?”

You didn’t gave him a response

instead you burst into laughter. Luhan frowned, "Yah, what are you laughing at?"

"Be-because.. Haha! You.. Haha!" you couldn't even finish your sentence because of you couldn't stop yourself on laughing.

"Yah, I couldn't understand a thing. Will you set aside your laugh first and say it straightly?" he hissed.

You tried to stop on laughing. You took some minutes before you calm down. You cleared your throat, "Okay," you pointed him, "You, I can't believe you're now a joker."

"What?"

"I thought you're really want me to pay this stuff toy but suddedly you said that you were just kidding. Honestly Luhan, being a joker doesn't fit you. But you know what? That's a good sign!"

He raised an eyebrow, "Good sign?"

You nodded, "A good sign for our success. Remember our deal? I'll teach you how to fall in love though this kind of thing isn't really need to teach by someone. Why I said that this is a good sign? Simple! If you didn't ask, girls likes boys with sense of humor so if you know how to joke, I'm very sure the girls will be attracted to you."

"Even you?" he asked.

You paused, "Yes but since I'm not a girl to you then it's a no. Also, make sure that your joke is not bad but in a good way."

He nodded then turned to you, "Wait, remember when we still on our trip? You told me that you're going to tell me about the next step. So, what is it?"

You stared at him for a moment before saying, "Find a girl."

"Mwo?"

"You need to find a girl, a perfect one. The girl who has a beautiful heart that can love you. The girl who will makes you fall in love." you replied.

"Who's that girl then?" he asked. You raised an eyebrow, "Aren't you listening to me? I told you to FIND a girl means we haven't encounter that girl yet."

He nodded, "Ohh.."

"We will try to find that girl as we get back in Korea. For now, let's take a rest.." you said as you hugged the deer stuff toy and closed your eyes to take a sleep.

Luhan gaze at you for a while. His gaze has a meaning that he can only underatand it by himself.

Soon, Luhan decided to take a sleep too. Moments later, he finally drifted to sleep.

---

The plane finally landed in Seoul Airport. All the students exited the plane and took the bus that were waiting outside.

Since it's separated with boys and girls, your seat partner now is Yoona while Seohyun and Yuri are partners.

Soon, the bus finally arrived at the school. All the students straightly headed to the dorms so you didn't got a chance to see Luhan again.

This day was really tiring so you just decided to continue resting on your room. Just after some moments, you drifted to sleep again since it's already late when you get back at school.

---

Morning came. It's now time to start attending classes again. It was already late for you to attend your first class when you woke up. Your friends were already gone but they left you a note saying that they're already went to their classes and not to wake you up than getting a kick from you.

You chuckled, "I understand." you mumbled. You put down the note on the table then you grabbed your breakfast and after that, you took a shower.

Since you're already late for your first class, you then decided to attend your second class.

After getting ready, you hopped on your bag pack. You exited the dorm and made your way to your class. You glanced at your wrist watch. Your eyes widen when you realize that you only have 5 minutes before the time of your 2nd class.

Because of the panic, you started to run. Unexpectedly, as you turned to the right, you accidentally bumped to someone. The envelop that was holding of someone suddenly dropped. You immediately took

it for that person and handed it back, "Mianhe."

As you looked up, you saw a one beautiful girl in front of you.

She smiled, "No, it's okay."

You scanned her from head to toe. She wasn't wearing a school uniform but there's a luggage with her. "Umm.. Are you a student here?" you asked.

She nodded, "I'm actually a new student here." You nodded with an 'o' shape formed on your lips.

"Can you help me?" she asked. You looked up, "Eh?"

"You know, I'm not familiar in this school and I can't find the dorms. Can you accompany me on the way there? If only if you have time."

You paused. You glanced at your wrist watch, \*Well, I'm already late. Helping her won't hurt, right?\* you smiled at her then nodded, "Let me see your dorm no. first."

She did.

"Oh! Your dorm is next to us." you said. "Really?" she happily asked. You nodded, "Come on, I'll walk you there."

With that, the both of you walk towards the dorm.

---

"Thank you very much for accompanying me here. I'm glad that my dorm is next to yours. By the way, I'm Qri. You?" she held out her hand for a handshake.

"Sooyoung." you replied as you shook her hand with a smile.

"Are you going to attend your classes today or not?" you asked. "I will. Can you also accompany there only if it's okay?"

You nodded, "Sure! Let me see your schedule."

She did.

"Woah! We're in the same English class. Let's go there together!" you beamed. She chuckled, "You're so energetic!" she commented.

"Eh?"

"Can I be your friend?" she asked. You smiled, "Of course but I think you're too beautiful to be my friend."

She laughed, "I don't think I'm beautiful." "Mwo?" you laughed, "Believe me, you're beautiful. Oh wait, do you already have your uniforms?"

She nodded. "Good! Go and change now. I'll wait for you outside." you said and was about to leave but she called you.

"Sooyoung!"

You turned around, "Eh?"

"Gomawo." she smiled.

You smiled back, "No problem."

Moments later, Qri finally stepped out from her dorm. You scanned her, \*Woah! She's so cute on her uniform.\*

"The uniform fits you well." you commented. "Really?" she asked. You nodded. She smiled, "Gomawo."

"Kaja?" She nodded.

And then, both of you started to walk on the way to the English class. As the both of you were walking, the other students especially the boys who are passing by are automatically looking at Qri's way. You turned to her and smiled, "I told you, you're beautiful. The boys couldn't take off their eyes on you." you commented.

She only chuckled.

Soon, the both of you finally reached the classroom. Luckily, your teacher was only about to enter the classroom. "Seonsaengnim!" you called. "Oh, Ms. Han." she said.

You turned to Qri then dragged her towards the teacher. "Seonsaengnim, there's a new student in our class. It's her." you said.

The teacher turned to Qri. Qri smiled at her then bowed, "Annyeong haseyo!"

"I already knew her. The director already told me about her joining our class. Come on Miss, I'll introduce you to the class." the she turned to you, "You, Ms. Han, go inside too and use the back door." she ordered.

You nodded, "Dae!" you turned to Qri, "Hwaiting chingu!"

She smiled then nodded.

You then entered the classroom.



Luhan was already there. You sat next to him since you were seatmates. Luhan frowned at you, "You're almost late." he muttered.

"I helped someone that's why." you simply replied without looking at him. "Who—" he didn't even finish his sentence when you interrupted him.

"Sshhh! Look, the new student came in." you pointed in front. Luhan followed your finger. As the time his eyes landed at sight in front, a frown suddenly formed on his face. For some reason, he doesn't like what he was seeing right now.

"Listen class, we have a new student. Miss, please introduce yourself." the teacher said.

Qri faced the class, "Annyeong haseyo! Lee Kyuri-immida but I prefer to be called Qri. Nice to meet you all. I hope we can get along." she smiled at everyone then bowed.

All the boys inside the class stared at her with interest while the girls were envious by her beauty.

You chuckled, "I knew it." you whispered. Luhan raised an eyebrow to you, "What?"

You rolled your eyes, "None of your business." He made a face.

"Thank you Ms. Lee. Please take the seat ummm.. oh there! Next to Mr. Lu at the right side. Please wait class, I need to get something." with that, the teacher left.

Qri scanned the classroom. A bright smile suddenly formed on her face as the time she saw

Luhan. She started to walk on her way to her seat looking at Luhan with a smile. She also noticed you. You smiled at her and waved a little. She smiled back.

As Qri sat on her place, she turned to Luhan. "**Ni Hao! I'm glad to see you again. I'm Qri, you?**" she spoke.

Luhan only ignored her.

"Wait, you know each other?" you asked, confused. You saw Qri smiled, "He saved me a week before."

"A week before? You mean in China?" you asked. She nodded, "Exactly! I'm in trouble that time. There's a thief trying to steal my bag but luckily he's there to save me." she looked at Luhan, "Thank you again."

You glanced at Luhan but he just kept his eyes in front. You frowned, remembering your days in China with him. Then you remembered the day of the first activity and it hits you.

"I thought you're lying that day. You did save a girl that time..." you whispered. You started to feel guilty.

"Now, you believed me." he rolled his eyes. You made a face, "Psh!" \*I'm not guilty anymore. Tsk!\*

Qri stared at the both of you, "I could see you two are close to each other." she commented. "It's none of your business." Luhan snapped, sarcastically.

You elbowed Luhan, "Yah, stop being the old Luhan again." you whispered. You looked up at Qri, "Don't mind what he had

said. By the way, he's Luhan. My bestfriend." you said.

Qri glanced at Luhan, "Your bestfriend?" she asked. You simply nodded. She smiled at Luhan, "Nice meeting you Luhan. I hope we can get along."

Luhan only nodded as a response. You rolled your eyes on him, "Don't mind him. I think he's not in a mood today. You know, monthly period."

Qri stared at you, "Eh?!"

Luhan gave you a death glare. You laughed, "Just kidding!"

Just then, the teacher came back. "Okay class. Let's start our discussion....."

All of you faced the front again. Qri was already focusing on the class while Luhan was also listening (?) maybe not. You stared at Qri for a moment.

Suddenly, you tapped Luhan's shoulder. He turned to you. You gestured him to come closer to you. He raised an eyebrow. 'Come on!' you mouthed.

He let out a sigh but obeyed you. He went closer then you whispered to his ear, "I think she's the perfect girl."

He turned to you, "Perfect girl?" he asked, whispering.

You nodded, "Remember the 2nd step of our deal? The 'Find a girl' thing. I think she's the right girl for that. You should start talking to her from now on."

“MWO?!”

## CHAPTER 46

“MWO?!” Luhan shouted as he suddenly stood up after hearing what you had said to him.

Now, everyone’s attention are now on him. You face-palmed yourself and slowly looked up only to see the face of your teacher. Her eyebrows furrowed as she narrowed her eyes to Luhan.

\*This is bad...\*

“Mr. Lu, what is your problem?!”

Before Luhan could reply, you snapped him. “Umm.. Seonsaengnim, mianhe. It’s my fault.” you apologized.

Luhan stared at you in disbelief. You just ignored him and looked at your teacher, “I was nagging at him that’s why..”

“Ms. Han and Mr. Lu, please get out of my class now!” the teacher ordered.

After hearing that, Luhan grabbed his bag and started walking out of the classroom. You lowered your head and followed him.

He was already walking at the corridor as you were walking behind him. He suddenly stopped and turned to you. He gave you a one unreadable look.

You gulped, \*Aigoo! I don’t like how he was looking at me right now..\*

“Follow me. We need to talk.” with that said, he continued walking. You lowered your head, \*I bet he’s mad at me because of what our teacher did to us.\* you sighed, \*This is so hard for me..\*

No choice, you followed him.

---

Both of you are now at the roof top. Your elbows are resting at the railing as well as his. The both of you were just staring at the scenery without saying a word. Only silence filled the atmosphere. You tried to start a conversation but whenever you open your mouth, no words wanted to come out from it so you just remained silent.

Suddenly, Luhan cleared his throat that breaks the silence. You turned to him but he wasn’t looking at you. He was still looking in front.

“About that girl,” he started. “Her name is Qri.” you reminded. “I’m not interested.”

“Eh?” This time, he turned to face you. “I’m not interested to her. I don’t like that girl.” he said.

“So, you hate her? Is that what you mean?” He let out a sigh then looked at the front again. “I don’t hate her either.” he replied.

“Then what are you trying to say now?” you asked, a bit irritated.

“What I mean is, I don’t like to talk to her. I don’t like to get

closer to her. In short, I don’t want her to be my friend.”

“You’re so bad.”

“Mwo?”

”“She’s nice, you know. I think she likes you. You should give her a chance to be your friend.” you muttered.

“I think you still didn’t get it.” you heard him sighed as he said that.

You turned to him, “Then explain it to me.” Luhan turned to you, “Do you really want to know?”

You nodded.

He then held both of your shoulders and looked straightly to your eyes. Your heart started to beat faster than normal but you didn’t say a word instead you just stared back, waiting for him to speak.

“I don’t want to pick a girl just because I want to fall in love. If she’s really the right girl that you were saying, then it will happen without me doing something.” he said.

You paused for a moment then removed his hands from your shoulders and went back to your position before. “And I think you still need to talk to her. You’ll never know if she’s the right one because on the first place, you already refused her chance to be the one.”

“I already told you, I don’t like that girl.” “Just give her a chance, okay?”

“I thought you’re smart and will

understand what I'm trying to make you feel but I guess I'm wrong. Once I said I don't like, that's final."

"But—"

"I don't want to talk about it anymore. I'm going now." he snapped and started to walk away.

"Luhan!" you called that made him stopped but didn't looked back to face you. "I don't want to be selfish but please think of this first. I'm not doing this because of our deal, I'm doing this because I want to help you. It's only for your own happiness."

He didn't say a word and just completely leave you behind. You let out a sigh, "In that way, my feelings for you will slowly fade away.." you whispered.

That's right! You already found out about your feelings for him. You realized it when you were on the school trip in China with Luhan. You're being close to Luhan day by day that made your feelings for him grow even more. You tried to lie to yourself that you're not in love with him but you was.

With that, you decided to just hide your feelings by your own self than anything else. You have two reasons on doing that. First, because you can't lose the dare and the second one is you were afraid to know what he felt for you. You were afraid to get rejection.

Today, you met Qri and it happens that she's the girl that Luhan saved in China week before. Maybe it's a coincidence though you take this as a chance

to continue helping Luhan how to fall in love. Though it will only give you pain in the heart, you don't care. You will do everything just to finish the dare and makes Luhan happy. As of now, that's what important to you. Aisde of that, there's nothing more.

You sighed then pulled out your phone and started texting one of your friend.

to: Yoona

*I can't eat lunch with you guys today. I have somethinh important to do. Please tell about this to Yuri and Seohyun. Mianhe. I'll eat lunch with you guys tomorrow, I promised.*

from: Sooyoung

\*At this moment, I want to have time alone. A time for myself to think..\*

---

It was already lunch.

"Come on, let's go to Sooyoung's classroom." Yuri said. "No need for that." Yoona snapped.

"Eh?" Seohyun and Yuri stared at her in confusion.

"She texted me and she said she can't eat with us today. She have something important to make." Yoona explained.

Seohyun and Yuri nodded in understanding and with that, they headed to the canteen.

"Yoona!" Kai's voice could be hear from the canteen's door. Yoona looked up. A smile

automatically formed on her face as she saw Kai waving at her to come over.

Yuri elbowed her, "Yah, what's that smile for? Don't tell me, you're in love with him?"

"Omo! Does that mean, you already lose the dare?" Seohyun added.

Yoona quickly shook her head, "A-ani! I'm not in love, okay? Let's just go. EXO are waiting for us."

Yuri rolled her eyes, "Psh! If you say so. Come on!" with that, the 3 of them walked towards EXO's table.

Everyone already know about you and your friends being close to EXO since the trip to China started so they won't surprised to see your friends with them anymore as well as you.

"Where's Sooyoung?" Kris asked as he glanced at Luhan to see his reaction. Luhan looked away. Kris smirked, \*I wonder what happened to them?\*

"She's busy so she can't eat with us." Yoona replied. "Okay, let's just eat. Come on Yoona, sit next to me." Kai offered.

Seohyun and Yuri gave her a glance. Yoona was about to reject Kai's offer but she was too late. Kai already dragged her to sit next to him.

"Guys, look! The new student came." Baekhyun said. All of them looked up even Luhan. He knew it was Qri that Baekhyun is talking about but he still looked up to make sure.

Qri met eyes with him. She

smiled at him and waved a little as she passed by their table.

“Isn’t she’s beautiful? Do you think she will like me? She even smiled and waved at me.” Baekhyun beamed.

Chanyeol hit his bestfriend’s head, “Stop dreaming. She didn’t waved and smiled at you.” he muttered.

“Eh? Then to who?”

“To Luhan hyung. You see that too guys, right?” Sehun said. The others nodded except for Kris, Baekhyun and of course Luhan.

Kris has a smirk on his face while staring at Luhan with intetest. \*It seems interesting now.. This will be exciting!\*

“Luhan, did you know her?” Baekhyun asked.

Luhan didn’t reply and just shrugged then started his food. Baekhyun pouted then glanced at Qri’s direction. “She’s really pretty and she seems nice.” he commented.

“Stop fantasizing about the new student. Just continue your food.” Chanyeol hissed. Baekhyun turned to Chanyeol and smiled.

“What are you smiling at?” Chanyeol asked. “You’re so cute when you’re jealous.” with that, Baekhyun continued his food again.

“Jealous your face!” Chanyeol hissed and continued his food also.

The 3 girls giggled because of BaekYeol moments.

Luhan suddenly stopped on eating and took a glance at Qri. She was smiling and talking with some girls on the same table as her. She’s very lovely when you see her like that.

Luhan then broke his gaze from her and caught Kris looking at him. Kris smirked as if he was thinking about something. Luhan rolled his eyes then focus on his food again.

---

After the time of thinking, you finally decided to attend your next class since the lunch time was already ended. You tried yourself to focus on the class and luckily, you made it thought it’s a bit hard for you.

On your last class of this day, you suddenly received a text message from Luhan.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Meet me after class at roof top.*

*from: Deer Lulu*

After class, you did what Luhan said on his text message. You staightly went to the roof top and saw him there, already waiting for you.

You took a deep breath before you walked towards him. “Luhan..”

He turned to you, “You came.” You just nodded, “So, why do you want to meet me here?”

There was a pause before he speak again. “I’ve finally decided,

I’ll give her a chance..”

## CHAPTER 47

“...I’ll give her a chance.” you heard him said that.

You were stunned by his words that you couldn’t react immediately. But then, he spoke again.

“I want to give Qri a chance. Since you’re my love tutor and as being your student, I’ll take this as an assignment.”

You looked at him and he smiled then he continued, “After our conversation earlier, I started to think about it. When I was thinking about it, I suddenly saw Qri and she smiled at me. I know I’m bad because I’m cold towards her and kept ignoring her. But then I realized that I won’t die if I give her a chance right? Also, I don’t want to lose this chance. Maybe, just maybe she’s the one that I’ve been waiting for to fall in love with...”

Those words makes your heart into pieces. Despite of the sadness that you were having right now, you still tried your best to smile though it’s a fake smile.

You took a deep breath before saying, “Y-You’ve made a right decision. Since you’re a good student and as being your love tutor, I’ll stop the sessions as a gift.”

Luhan looked at you in surprise, "What are you saying? Why are you going to stop the sessions? It's not like I already fall in love with her so why?"

You chuckled, "The sessions will stop but I didn't said that I'll stop helping you." Luhan raised an eyebrow, "What do you mean?"

"What I'm saying is, we don't need to continue our sessions anymore because we're already done with that. That's only for step one. Now that we're already in step two and also we already selected a girl, I'll help you to get close to her." you explained.

Luhan's mouth formed into a small 'O' as he nodded. "Let's start tomorrow." you beamed as if you're excited for it.

He didn't say a word nor reacted through nodding. Now, the silence filled the atmosphere.

You cleared your throat that broke the silence. "Umm.. I should leave now." you were about to leave but Luhan stopped you by grabbing your wrist.

Slowly, you turned to face him, "Hmm?"

Luhan was serious as he looked at you directly in the eyes. "Can you... stay with me a little longer?"

Slowly, you nodded.

Both you and Luhan walked towards the railings and rested your elbows there. Still, no one open a topic. You took a glance at Luhan but he was only staring

at the scenery in front of the two of you. You also did.

"Do you know what was my first impression to you?" you suddenly asked. "Ani." he replied shortly.

"Then, do you want to know?" you asked. He nodded, "Ne."

You took a deep breath, "Everyone's first impression to you is that you are sweet, gentle and caring because of your angelic face but my first impression to you was different. My first impression to you is cold-hearted. I'd never saw you smile at once before that's why. But now I realized that you're not. Everyone's first impression to you was the real you, the real Luhan. Because of this love tutor thingy, I've finally knew who you really are."

Luhan stared at you but didn't say a word as you said those words about him. You turned to face him and smiled, "And I didn't regret doing this."

A smile crept on Luhan's face unknowingly.

"See, you're smiling now." you snapped. Luhan immediately straightened his face as he looked away and cleared his throat.

"Luhan.." you called. "Hmm?"

You looked at the scenery again before you speak again. "What is your first impression to me?"

There was a short pause before he give you his reply. "Honestly, I don't have any impression to you when we first met." It made you faced him, "Mwo?!"

Luhan smiled, \*Beacuse the first time I met you, you already showed me who you really are..\*

You were still staring at him, totally confused. He then faced you, "That's the truth. I don't have any impression to you because I hate girls, remember?"

You rolled your eyes because of his statement then both of you burst into laughter.

"But honestly," he started that made you stopped on laughing and stared at him. "My first impression to you is,"

\*Aish! Why do he kept pausing. Luhan, just say it!\* you nagged on your head.

"...secret!" then he laughed. Your jaw dropped and then rolled your eyes, "I thought you were serious this time." you pouted. He chuckled, "But you're wrong." You made a face.

"You'll find it soon." he whispered.

"Eh?"

He shook his head, "Nothing."

"Umm.. Luhan?"

"Hmm?"

"Do you know why I'm helping you?" you asked.

He shook his head, "Ani. Gundae,"

You faced him, waiting for him to continue. "I don't want to know. I think it's better if I didn't know your reason." he



said.

\*I don't want you to find out also..\* you smiled, "Psh! Even if you wanted to know, I'll never tell it to you. It's a secret."

He rolled his eyes. You chuckled.

"It's getting late. We should go back to the dorms now. You still need to make plan on how you will help me to get close to Qri. Come on, I'll walk you there."

You shook your head, "Ani. You don't have to. Also, I wanted to walk alone." you said.

"Are you sure?" he asked. You nodded. He let out a sigh, "Okay then. Let's just go down together." he said. You nodded again.

With that, the both of you went downstairs. Minutes later, you were already separated to him.

At this moment, you couldn't stop yourself on crying anymore. Everytime Luhan mentioned Qri, seems like there's a knife stabbing your heart.

\*Why am I even crying? This is my suggestion anyway. This is for Luhan's happiness so I should be happy also for him. I need to support him even if this slowly killing my own heart. It doesn't matter. I think Luhan also like Qri. I can feel it when he talks about her. Yes, that's right Sooyoung! He likes her that's why he wants to give her a chance. Han Sooyoung, wake up! You need to be happy for him even if it's hurts badly...\*

"Sooyoung-ah!" a sudden voice called you.

## CHAPTER 48

"Sooyoung-ah!"

After hearing the voice, you quickly lowered your head and wiped your tears away. Then you looked up to see the owner of the voice.

It was Qri. She was waving at you with a smile on her face. She then run towards you.

"Ohh.. Qri.."

"Are you going back to the dorm now?" she asked. You nodded.

"Geureom," she started. You turned to her. She smiled, "Can I walk with you?" she asked.

"Eh?!"

"I just want to walk with you on the way to the dorm. You know, you're the first person I met here and also my first friend in this school that's why but if you don't want to walk with me, I'll understand.."

You shook your head, "Ani. Of course, you can walk with me." Qri brightened, "Really?"

You smiled and nodded.

With that, both you and Qri started walking on the way to the dorm. "Umm.. Sooyoung.." Qri called.

"Hmm?"

"Do you think Luhan hate me?"

That question made you stopped on walking and so did Qri. She examined your expression. "There's no need to answer it. I think I know the answer now." she said in sad tone.

You looked up and smiled, "Of course, he didn't hates you." She smiled back, "You don't need to lie."

You shook your head, "I'm not actually lying. Luhan likes you." \*But I want it to be a lie..\*

"L-Luhan likes me?" she asked, excitedly.

"I think. You know, he's my bestfriend do I know if he likes someone or not." you replied. "How sure are you?"

You started to walk again as Qri followed then you said, "I'm not that sure but believe me, Luhan likes you."

"Well to be honest, I like him... a lot." Qri stated. You turned to her and saw her smiling.

"Since I first time I met him, I already like him. He saved me. It seems like we're in a drama and he's my savior. He's so brave to do that." Your heart suddenly ache because of Qri's words.

She faced you, "Since you're my friend now, I want to be honest to you. I actually transferred to this school because of Luhan."

You looked up at her, surprised. She shyly smiled, "This is so embarrassing but that's the truth. I've noticed his uniform that time and since this school is popular, it's not hard to find

this.”

You remained silent. Actually, you don't want to listen to her anymore but you need to. This will help you to make Luhan happy.

“This is embarrassing but honestly, I got jealous when I saw you talking with Luhan because I thought you're his girlfriend.” she said in low voice but loud enough for you to hear.

You stared at her in shock. She smiled, “But when I found out that you're only his bestfriend, I felt relieved.”

“Uh-oh.. Don't worry, I'm only his bestfriend. Like what I've said, he likes you.” you said.

She smiled again, “Gomawo.”

“Ehh?”

“Thanks for telling me about this. I will try my best to make Luhan like me more.” she said.

You smiled, a forced smile.

“Oh! We're already here!” Qri said as she looked in front. Just then, you realized that the both of you already arrived in front of the dorm.

All of a sudden, Qri hugged you. You were totally surprised by the sudden hug. “I'm so glad to have a walk with you and also, I'm glad to have a conversation with you just now.” she then broke the hug, “I'm glad to be your friend.”

You just stared at her, not knowing what to say. “So... I'll go inside now. You too. Anneong chingu!” she waved. You only nodded.

With that, Qri entered their dorm and so did you. As you entered the dorm, it was already dark so you just straightly went to your room. You saw Seohyun on her study table. She was studying for math again.

Without any thinking, you walked towards her and hugged her from behind.

“Oh.. Sooyoung-ah, you're finally back.” she said. You forcedly smiled, “Hmm..”

She stood up and faced you that made you released her from the hug. She worriedly stared at you, “Is there something happen?”

You chuckled, “Of course not! There's nothing happened.” “Then why did you hug me all of a sudden?” she questioned.

“Wae? Can't I hug my friend. Come on, let me hug you.” you then hugged her again. She was taken a back by the hug. “Yah, if something happen, just tell me. I'll listen.” she offered.

You shook your head while hugging her, “Don't worry, nothing really happened. I just want to hug you.” you whispered. Seohyun then let you hug her.

As much as possible, you didn't let yourself on crying. You closed your eyes to prevent a tear to fall down from your eyes. Seohyun patted your back, “I know there's something happened to you but I don't want to force you to spill it. Maybe it's because of Myungsoo again...” she thought.

Finally, you broke the hug. You

smiled at her, “Thanks for letting me hug you Seohyun-ah..” She just nodded.

You glanced at her study table, “I see you're doing your best to not to lose the dare.” you stated. She glanced back, “Uh-oh.. Yeah. Who wants to lose the dare? Of course, I don't.”

You smiled, “You're right. I don't want to lose the dare also. I'll give my best to make this dare success.” you said. “I'm going to sleep now. Go back and study now. Goodnight.”

Seohyun nodded then go back to her study table and continued her business.

\*That's right! I need to think about the dare, only the dare..\* with that, you went to your bed and let yourself to take a rest.

## CHAPTER 49

The next morning you woke up, Luhan's face was the one that greeted you. You blinked a couple of times, \*Am I dreaming? What's Luhan doing so early here?\* you asked yourself on your mind.

You stared at his face. He's also staring back at you. You frowned, he frowned. You closed your eyes, \*What kind of dreaming is this? I should back to sleep now. I still have class to attend tomorrow..\*

“How long do you want to sleep there?” a voice said.

\*That voice...\* you immediately

open your eyes and there he is, Luhan's face was still close to yours with a frown. You were speechless right now that you couldn't say a word nor moving your body a bit.

1 second...

2 seconds...

3 seconds...

4 seconds...

5 seconds before your memory got sunk.

You immediately pushed him that made him fall on the floor. "What are you doing here?!" you questioned as you sat at up and glared at him.

"Ouch!" he winced. "Yah, stop acting like you're really hurt. As if I pushed you hard." you hissed.

But Luhan didn't stood up instead he just rubbed his butt. You took a peek at him. His expression, seems like he's really hurt.

Without any hesitation, you jumped off from your bed and approached him. "Do you really hurt?"

He nodded with the same expression.

You bit your bottom lip, "Aigoo. Mianhe. I didn't mean to—" you didn't got a chance to finish your sentence because Luhan burst into laughter.

"HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAH AHAHAHAHA!"

You frowned, "Yah, what are

you laughing at?!"

Instead of answering you, he just continued laughing.

"WAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAH AHAHAHA!"

"Yah, what's your problem?!"

Finally, he stopped laughing and looked at you. "Were you worried about me?" he asked seriously.

You swallowed hard. "MWO?!" you stood up, "Stop acting! Come on. Get out of my room now!"

"Who said I'm acting? My butt really hurts." he pouted. You stared at him, "A-are you really hurt?" you slowly asked.

Again, he burst into laughter. "HAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA!"

"Yah, will you quit on laughing! Stop fooling around! It's not even funny! I was worried here and you only laugh at me! You're so annoying. Whatever! Leave now, I still need to prepare for school." you said then walked towards the bathroom.

Luhan blinked a couple of times at your back before his mind finally sunk. He quickly stood up and run after you. That time, you were already inside the bathroom.

Your eyes widen when you saw Luhan followed you up to the bathroom. "Yah! What are you doing here?!"

"Sooyoung.."

"Stop right there! Don't step closer to me!" you warned but Luhan kept coming closer to you.

You looked around, searching for a weapon to make him stop on coming closer. Luckily, you found one. You quickly grabbed the hand shower on your side and splashed the water to him.

"Ulfp.. Ulpd!"

"Get out!" you ordered. Luhan did it, backwards. When he's finally out of the door, you turned off the shower and glared at him. "What do you think you're doing?!" you hissed.

"Mwo?! I think I'm the one that asking you the same question. Why did you splashed the water on me?"

You rolled your eyes, "What did you expect me to do? Letting you to see me taking a bath inside, hmm?"

"Eh?" then Luhan realized that he followed you inside the bathroom. He rubbed the back of his neck, "Uh.. Mian."

"Whatever!" you then shut the door closed. "Don't you dare to open the door!" you shouted before completely taking a bath.

Luhan pouted outside. He scanned himself, "Aish! This isn't good. My uniform is wet now." he whispered as he realized how wet his upper uniform is.

With a sigh, Luhan exited your room and went to the living room.

---

After taking a bath, you wore your uniform and fixed it carefully before you exited your room.

“Omo!” you gasped when you saw Luhan sitting at the living room HALF-NAKED.

Luhan turned to your direction after hearing you gasped. You glared at him, “What are you doing? Wear your uniform!” you said.

“I can’t.” he simply replied.

“MWO?!”

He gestured his upper uniform that was hanging, “You see, my uniform is wet because of what you did so I can’t wear it like that.”

“Are you blaming me?”

“I didn’t said that. I was only explaining.”

You rolled your eyes, “Whatever! Just wear it and get out before someone saw you here.” you ordered. “What about my uniform?” he asked.

“Wear it.”

“Mwo?!”

“Just wear it, will you? Go out and go back to your dorm to change your uniform. DUH!” you said with you rolling your eyes.

“But—” he was cut off because you grabbed his uniform and thow it to him. “I said WEAR IT NOW!”

“Psh!” he sighed but obeyed you.

“Wait here. I’ll take a look if there’s someone outside that might see us.” you said then walked towards the main door.

Right after you you opened the door, a sight of familiar figure greeted you. “Oh.. Sooyoung-ah!”

“Uh-oh.. Qri!” you forced a smile.

That name made Luhan turned to your direction. Your body was still inside the dorm while your face was peeking outside.

“Are you going to your first class now?” Qri asked. “Eh?”

“Actually, I was about to go but then you open the door so if it is okay with you, can we go together?” she asked with a smile.

You made a pause before you replied. “Okay. Wait me here. I’ll just get my bag.” She nodded.

With that, you went back inside and closed the main door. You walked towards Luhan and get your bag beside him, “I’ll go first. Don’t leave yet. I’ll text you.” you were about to go but Luhan grabbed your wrist that made you stopped, “You’re leaving me here alone?”

“We can’t go out together. Besides, Qri is waiting for me outside. I need to go now.” you removed his hand from your wrist and started walking again but he spoke again. “Then I don’t have a choice. I’ll go with you.”

You stopped and looked back at him, “What? Qri might get

suspicious if you do.” you said in a low voice, not wanting Qri to hear it.

“Then stay with me.” he snapped. “Mwo?! Andwae!”

“Geureom! Let’s go together then.” he stood up and started to walked towards the door. You immediately blocked his way. He raised an eyebrow. “Okay. I’ll stay.” you said.

Luhan smiled, “Good.” then sat back on his seat.

With a sigh, you put down your bag. “Wait here. I’ll just explain to Qri.” Luhan just nodded. You then approached the door again.

Qri smiled as you open the door. “Ready?”

“Umm.. Qri actually, I forgot that I still have to do something. It’s really important. I don’t think I can attend my first 2 classes. Can we just see each other in English class later?”

“Is that so? It’s okay, I understand. I should go now. Bye! See you later!” she waved the left. You just waved back. \*Mianhe..\*

With that, you closed the door and went back to Luhan.

## CHAPTER 50

“So, how come you’re here?” you asked as you sat next to Luhan. He didn’t say anything but next thing he did shocked you. Luhan slowly unbuttoned his uniform.

“Y-Yah, what are you doing?” you nervously asked. He didn’t responded again but continued on what he was doing.

“Stop that.” you said but he didn’t. Now, his all his button were done. He removed his uniform and faced you.

Your heart skipped as you swallowed hard. Just then, Luhan slowly coming closer and closer to you. You also saw him stretched his left hand towards your direction.

You immediately closed your eyes, \*Omo! God, please help me. Please stop Luhan to do something bad to me..\*

1 second...

2 seconds...

3 seconds...

You suddenly heard him whispered, “Open your eyes. I won’t do anything bad to you.”

\*Huh?\* you slowly opened your eyes. You saw him smiling at you while his face was only inches away from yours. You open your mouth to speak but nothing came out.

“I just need a hanger.” he said. “Eh?”

Luhan took the hanger on your side and waved it you then went back to his seat again.

Your mouth formed an O shape as you sighed, relieved.

After Luhan hook his uniform on the hanger, he stood up and let it hang again. Luhan then

went back to his seat next to you.

You frowned at him. He raised an eyebrow. “You still didn’t answer my question.” you said.

“What question?”

You rolled your eyes, “How come you’re here early in the morning?”

He shrugged, “I only wanted to fetch you and since your friends said that you’re still sleeping, I went to your room to wake you up. Don’t worry, your friends knew that I’m here.”

“Waeyo?”

“Eh?”

“Why do you want to fetch me?”

There was a pause before he finally responded to your question. “Because you’re my bestfriend. Wae? Can’t I fetch my bestfriend?”

\*Ohh.. Bestfriend..\* somehow, that word is like a knife that stabbing your heart. “Right!” that was you only said.

“Luhan..”

“Hmm?”

“Why do you want me to stay here with you?”

That question made Luhan swallowed hard. “B-Because I don’t want to stay alone here besides I want to have a talk with you.”

You turned to him, “T-Talk with me? About what?”

“Qri.”

That was a very simple answer yet a very big affection to your feelings. “That’s why you didn’t let me leave with Qri, hmm?”

“Maybe.”

You ignored his reply and just asked him another question. “So.. What do you want to talk about her?”

“All that I need to know.”

“Like what?”

“Are you friends with her?”

“Mwo?”

“Just answer that question first.”

You rolled your eyes, “Yes, she’s now my friend. I just had a conversation with her yesterday.”

“What’s the conversation all about?”

“You.”

“Excuse me?”

“All we talked about is you.”

“What did you said and she said?”

“I didn’t say anything that much. As I told you, she likes you.”

“I already know that.”

You raised an eyebrow, “How did you know?” He rolled his eyes, “You always telling me that since the first day she attended this school.”



“Ohh..”

“So.. How come she already like me?” he asked. “I think it’s love at first sight.”

“What?!”

“When the time you saved her, she already fell from you. And the reason why she transferred here was also because of you.”

“Because of me?”

You nodded, “She noticed your uniform that time that’s why and since she likes you, she went here to Korea to see you.”

Luhan was speechless. He didn’t expect that he’s the reason why Qri is here. \*If only I can back the time. I didn’t do that..\* he sighed.

You turned to him, “What was that sigh for?”

He shook his head, “Nothing. It’s just that I didn’t expect that she likes me that much taht she did everything just to be with me in this school.”

\*Right! She’s really brave to do such things unlike me, I can’t give up the dare because of you. It’s not that I don’t want to lose, it’s just that I don’t want to get hurt anymore. And besides, I think you already like her..\*

You force a smile, “Are you saying that you like her now?”

Luhan faced you. He was about to say ‘no’ but when he saw you smiling, he said, “Yes.” instead.

You were sad about his reply but you didn’t let the smile on

your face fade away. “D-Don’t worry, I’ll help you to make her fall in love with you even more.”

He nodded and smiled, a fake one.

You stood up, “I’ll check your uniform. Maybe it’s dry now.” you then walked towards the direction of it.

“Aigoo! It’s still a bit wet. Wait here, I’ll make dry easily.”

Luhan just nodded. With that, you grabbed his uniform and went to your room.

Luhan flatted his back on the back of the couch as he rested his head on the top of the couch and let out a heavy sigh. \*Am I doing the right thing?\*

---

As you entered the room, your tears continuously fall from your eyes. You let your tears fall at this brief moment before you finally dry Luhan’s uniform.

After that, you ironed it and hook it back to the hanger. You checked first your face on the mirror if your eyes were red. Luckily, it’s not.

You then exited your room and went back to Luhan. “It’s done. Go and wear it now. The third class will start after few minutes.” you said to him as you handed the uniform.

Luhan took it and did as you told. As he was ready, the both of you leave the dorm together.

## CHAPTER 51

The whole time of walking was silent. No one dare to open a topic.

“Sooyoung-ah!” you suddenly heard a familiar voice called you that broke the silence. It was Qri. She was smiling.

“Ohh.. Qri..”

“Hello Sooyoung and Luhan. Are you going to the class now? Can I go with you two?” she asked.

Both you and Luhan looked at each other. You’re the first one who looked away and faced Qri. You smiled, “You both go first. I need to use the rest room.”

You then whispered to Luhan, “Take this chance to have a talk with her. I’ll go first.”

You then faced Qri again, “I’m sorry but I really need to use the rest room now.” She nodded, “Okay. Go ahead.”

You glanced once more at Luhan before you run off. As you finally runaway, you glanced back again. You saw them already walking on the way to the classroom and also TALKING TO EACH OTHER.

You heaved a sigh, \*It hurts to give you to her but I’m not selfish so be happy with her, ne?\*

you smiled then entered the rest room.

You didn’t pee or anything. You just wash your hands and looked at yourself at the mirror. You smiled at yourself, \*I’m happy... or not? But I need to.\*

You stayed a little bit at the rest room before you completely went to your English class. You took a deep breath before you enter the classroom.

Right after you opened the door, your heart breaks. You saw Luhan smiling at Qri and so was her.

Slowly, you walked towards your seat with a heavy heart. \*I should be happy now. It's all my fault anyways..\*

As when you sit on your place, he didn't even gave you a glance. He was still talking to Qri. \*I guess he didn't notice me..\*

"Ohh! Sooyoung, you're here now!" Qri said. You turned to them and forced a smile, "Ohh yeah.."

"When did you came?" Luhan asked.

\*So.. he really didn't notice me?\* "Just now." you replied.

Just then, the teacher came. The 3 of you straightened up and focus in front. In the middle of the class, you glanced at Luhan. He was focusing on the teacher.

Suddenly, Qri's pen fell on the floor all of a sudden. She was about to get it but Luhan did it for her. He was smiling as he handed it to her. Then I saw Qri blushing as she took it. "Gomawo."

"No problem." he replied, still smiling. Qri smiled back before facing the front again.

Before you burst into tears, you immediately faced your front to prevent seeing anything that will

break your heart.

Little did you know, Luhan's smile faded immediately as Qri focus at the class again. He glanced at you but you weren't looking. You're only focusing at the class.

He silently sighed. \*I guess you really don't have feelings for me. I just kept assuming the fact that it will never happen. I should stop liking you now. From now on, I'll convince myself to like Qri instead. I think that would be good for the both of us.\* he then focus on the class also.

---

"Class dismissed." the teacher announced. It's now time for lunch.

You faced Luhan, "Luhan, I can't go with you for lunch. I still need to talk with my other teachers of my first 2 classes for not attending the class yesterday and also today. Can you tell about this to my friends?"

Luhan, "Okay. I tell them."

"Gomawo." after you said that, you fixed your things.

"Umm.. Luhan, if you don't mind, can I eat lunch with you?" Qri asked. Luhan glanced at you, "Of course, you can."

"I'm going now." you said without looking at them then completely leave the classroom.

"Kaja?" Luhan asked Qri. She beamed and nodded. With that, the both of them headed to the canteen.

"Luhan hyung!" Sehun waved at

him. Luhan glanced at Qri, "Come on, I'll introduce you to them." Qri nodded and smiled.

"Ohh.. you're with the new student." Baekhyun said with an amused smile.

"Yeah. She's Qri, I and Sooyoung's classmate in English class. Qri, they're my friends." Luhan introduced them one by one. "Also, these are Sooyoung's friends." he also introduced them one by one.

"Annyeong haseyo! Qri-immnida. Nice meeting you all of you." she said with a smile.

"Woah! Yepeoda!" Baekhyun commented that made Qri chuckled. Chanyeol hit his head, "You looks like a fanboy on what you were saying."

Baekhyun pouted. All of them laughed at him.

Luhan turned to Qri, "Come on, let's sit." Qri smiled and nodded. Then, they sat at the two empty seats.

"Hyung, where's Sooyoung noona?" Sehun asked. "Yeah, where is she?" Yuri also asked.

Luhan told what you said earlier. They all nodded in understanding. "Oh wait Luhan, didn't you wak—" Yuri didn't even her sentence because Luhan cut her off.

"Sleeping is her habit so maybe that's the reason why she missed her first two classes."

"Eh?" Yuri was confused.

"Come on, let's just eat. Don't waste the time." Luhan snapped. Everyone nodded in agreement

except for Kris.

“I forgot that I need to borrow a book at the library. I have to go now.” Kris turned to Qri, “Sorry if I can’t eat with you. Maybe I can eat with you next time.”

Qri shook her head, “Ani, it’s okay. I think you’re in a hurry now. Maybe that’s very important.”

Kris smiled, “Okay then.” he looked at the others, “I’m off first.” with that, he left.

---

Your talk about your teachers ended immediately. Since they already knew you, they didn’t let you explain yourself anymore. It was okay with them whatever your reason is.

You felt relieved about that but now, where are you going to go? Your talk with your teachers only took 5 minutes so you still have 40 minutes to eat lunch but you don’t want since Qri will probably with Luhan right now.

You decided to just stayed at the roof top instead to see them happily together.

You rested your arms at the railings as you peacefully looked at the scenery in front of you.

“I thought you were talking to your teachers right now?” a sudden voice came up.

You turned to your left,

“Kris..”

## CHAPTER 52

“How did you know that I’m here? Did you bring someone with you? Why aren’t you eating lunch with them?” you asked Kris continuously.

He only chuckled. You frowned, “Yah, did I say something funny?”

He laughed even more. You raised an eyebrow, “Are you crazy? Laughing without a reason?”

Finally, he stopped laughing and faced you. He smiled, “Now I know.” he said. “Mwo?”

He shook his head the stared at the scenery in front, “You like him, don’t you?”

“Eh?”

“You like Luhan, right?” he asked as he faced you. You looked away, “Of course, I like him. He’s my bestfriend.”

“Oh come on, we both know what I mean by that question. You like him as a guy, am I right?”

“Stop asking me that kind of nonsense question.”

“How come my question is nonsense? My friend is involved here and also you that considering as my friend too. Will you just answer my question? You only need to give me a YES and a NO answer. Is that really hard for you to choose between those answers?”

You remained silent. \*It’s actually hard, Kris..”

“Okay, I’ll repeat my question. Do you like Luhan as a guy?” he repeated.

Still, you remained silent.

“Okay, I think I already know the answer. Silence means YES, right?”

You let out a sigh, “Yes, I like him.” you said in a low voice.

Kris looked at you in surprise. He didn’t expect that you will admit it. “Then why did you let him to be with Qri?” he asked.

You closed your eyes, “I like him, I really like him and I hate the fact that I’m giving him to Qri but I need to.”

“What? Why? Are you sick or something?” he asked.

That question made you chuckled. “You’ve watched many dramas, Kris. I’m not sick okay. I have a healthy body. Tsk!” you rolled your eyes.

“Then why do you need to do that?” “It’s a secret.”

He raised an eyebrow. You smiled, “I can’t say it to anyone. You should contented now that you know that I like Luhan.”

He rolled his eyes, “I already knew about that.”

“But how did you know?”

He paused and slowly faced you. He smiled, “It’s a secret.” You made a face, “Psh!”

“Do you really want to spend the whole lunch time here?” he suddenly asked. “That would be better for me.”

He nodded in understanding.

“You, aren’t you going to eat lunch with your friends?”

“Oh right! I’ll go ahead now.” he said and started to walk away. “Kris, wait!” you called.

He stopped looked back at you, “About me liking Luhan,” you bit your bottom lip. You were about to continue your sentence but Kris did it for you.

“Don’t worry, I’ll keep it as a secret.” You smiled, “Gomawo.”

“No problem.” he was about to go but you stopped him once again. “Wait!”

He looked back again, raising an eyebrow. “Can I ask you once more?” you asked. He nodded, “Go on.”

“Why did you went here?” you asked. “Because I want to be sure about your feelings for my friend. Honestly, I didn’t expect that you would admit it.” he chuckled, “You know what?”

You looked up at him. He smiled, “You’re the one that I want for Luhan not that Qri girl.” after he said that, he completely left.

You tilted your head, \*He wants me for Luhan and not Qri? This is the first we had a serious talk but he chose me than Qri? Why? Didn’t he notice that Luhan likes Qri? Psh! I really don’t understand that guy.\*

You smiled, \*Well at least he wants to support me though I already gave up to fight for him...\*

---

All the classes were ended. All the students headed to their respective dorms and you were one of them.

As you were walking on the way to the dorm, an arm suddenly linked on your arm.

You turned to your side, “Ohh.. Qri..” She smiled, “Can I walk with you again?” she asked. You nodded, “O-Of course.”

“Did you already talk to your teachers?” she asked. You smiled and nodded, “They understand.”

“That’s good. I thought they will give you punishment. Good thing, they didn’t. I was worried about you.” she said. You smiled, \*She’s really nice. I won’t regret chosing her to be with Luhan.\*

“You don’t have to worry. I’m alright. You, how’s your time with Luhan?” you asked.

“Good. I’m very happy that he was nice to me and I’m glad that we’ve got a chance to spend time together.” she said with a giggle.

\*I shouldn’t be ask her about this. I only hurting myself more and more..\* you sighed.

“Wae? Are you sick?” she asked worriedly. You immediately shook your head, “Ani. I was just tired a bit.” you excused.

“Ohh.. So sad, I really wanted to

tell you how happy I was..” she sadly said. “It’s okay. You can still tell me about it while we’re walking.” you snapped. \*Aigoo! What did I said again?\*

She smiled, “Cheongmal?” You forced a smile and just nodded. You don’t have a choice anymore, you couldn’t say no.

“You know what? Actually, I’m very surprised when Luhan approach me when you went to the rest room this morning. I can’t believe that he talks to me. I was so speechless that time but he said that I can speak and don’t be shy. Then I suddenly chuckled by that statement. It was simple but when Luhan said it, I can’t help it but smile. I never felt this kind of feeling before. Only Luhan did this to me. That feeling made me happy.”

You decided to remain silent. \*She really is happy..\*

“Also, when my pen suddenly dropped on the floor, he took it for me. I thanked him and he smiled at me. That time, I know I’m blushing. Oh my gosh! I think I’m in love..”

You froze, \*She already fell in love with him...\*

“Sooyoung? Are you okay?” she asked when you suddenly stopped on walking that made her stopped also.

You snapped out your thought and faced her. “Oh.. Gwenchana. It’s just that, my head is aching.” you said as you touch your forehead.

“Is that so? Let’s hurry then so you could rest now.” she said. You just nodded.

After few minutes, the both of you finally reached the dorm. "Go inside now and rest. You're making me worried. Take care of yourself, ne?"

You only nodded and forced a smile. She gestured you to go inside. "Gomawo, Qri." you said.

She chuckled, "You don't have to. I didn't did anything. Just go inside and rest, ne? I'm going now, see you tomorrow."

You smiled and nodded then opened the door. You were about to enter the dorm but suddenly stopped. You glanced at Qri once more, \*Don't be too nice to me. You're making it hard for me to hate you. I should really give up now...\*

With a sigh, you completely entered the dorm.

## CHAPTER 53

The next morning, you woke early. You decided to prepare breakfast for your friends and also for yourself.

As you were preparing, Yuri suddenly went out from her room. "Good morning!" you greeted with a smile.

"Woah! You woke up early. That was new." she said that instead of greeting you back. You rolled your eyes, "That's not new. Psh!"

"Whatever! But how come you woke up early?" she asked.

\*I actually having a hard time to sleep last night..\* "Psh! What kind of question is that? I just woke up, okay. Oh! Also, I'm preparing for our breakfast." you said.

"Can I help?"

"Of course! That would be nice of you." you stated. She rolled her eyes, "Psh!" then both of you burst into laughter.

"What's going here?" Seohyun and Yoona suddenly came out. You and Yuri looked up.

"We're just preparing for our breakfast." you said. "I want to help." Yoona said. "Nado! Nado!" Seohyun beamed.

Both you and Yuri glanced at each other then faced the two again. You both smiled and nodded.

The 4 of you started to prepare the breakfast all together. You actually miss this, having time with your friends.

\*I may not have a love life right now well at least I still have my friends with me..\* you smiled and focus on preparing the food.

After the preparation, the 4 of you eat the breakfast all together then went to school all together also.

\*As much as my friends are with me, I'll try my best to be happy everyday.\*

---

*Kriiiiiing! Kriiiiiing!*

It's now time for the 3rd class.

English class was actually your favorite class before but now, not really. Honestly, you really don't want to attend this class anymore but you can't. You can't lost your scholarship.

With a heavy sigh, you headed to your English class even it's against to your will.

As expected, Luhan was already there. He was talking with Qri again. You didn't bother to get their attention anymore so you just straightly headed to your seat and silently sat on it. You glanced at them but they seems busy on their conversation.

You turned to the window beside you, trying to cheer up yourself. No one outside. The view was silent as how your heart silently beating for Luhan.

Minutes later, the teacher came. All you just did is only focus at the class. Luckily, you successfully make it.

As the class ended, you decided to not escape anymore. You decided to grab a lunch with Luhan and the others and also with Qri. She's now part of your friends anyways.

The 3 of you headed to the canteen all together.

"Qri, sit here beside me!" Baekhyun called as the 3 of you arrived at the canteen. You saw Chanyeol hit Baekhyun's head. You chuckled and shook your head because of them.

Baekhyun pouted, "Psh! Quit that jealousy, will you?!" he then looked at Qri's direction again and smiled as he waved her over.



\*Their attention is now with Qri. Did they even know who I am?\* you sadly thought.

Suddenly, you felt someone tapped your shoulder. You turned to your side and saw Kris. "Ohh.. Kris.."

"Come on, the food is waiting. Do you want them to get mad at you?" he said. You chuckled, "Nice joke."

He smiled, "Let's just sit, okay?" You smiled and nodded, "Araseo Duizhang." He glared at you but then smiled. With that, both of you headed to the table and sat next to each others.

Luhan frowned at the sight, \*Since when did they get close to each other like that? Did I missed something? Aish! Whatever!\* he turned to Qri, "Come on, let's sit." She smiled and nodded.

Both Luhan and Qri sat next to each other, in front of you and Kris.

AWKWARD.

You turned to Kris and whispered, "Help me please.." Kris turned to you and blinked. "Distract me." you whispered again.

"Yah, what are you talking about?" Luhan snapped. You faced him, "Eh? Uh-oh.. Nothing. Nothing."

Luhan rolled his eyes, "If you say so.." You ignored Luhan and turned to Kris again and gave your expression that you were begging him.

Kris didn't responded on that instead he do something. He

took some foods and placed to your plate, "Eat all of that before the food voluntarily run from you."

After he said that, you couldn't help but laugh. That simple made you forgot that Luhan was right in front of you. Not fully though but you were happy that Kris was trying his best to distract you.

You smiled at him, "Gomawo." He smiled back, "You're always welcome." he winked. You chuckled.

"Yah, what's happening here? Don't tell me, the both of you are dating?" Suho questioned at you and Kris. Luhan suddenly choked by that question. Kris smirked.

You panicked and immediately handed him a glass of water. Qri also did at the same time as you.

Luhan stared at the glass of you were holding and also to Qri's. He took the one that Qri's holding instead of yours. Your heart sank. Slowly, you put down the glass of water back on the table.

"We're not dating, so stop questioning us. We're just friends, close friends." Kris suddenly said. You turned to him. He just smiled. You smiled back, \*Gomawo..\*

You turned to Luhan. Qri was gently patting his back. "Gwenchana?" she asked, worried. You saw Luhan nodded and smiled at her, "I'm perfectly fine. Don't worry."

You quickly looked away and started eating your food.

Luhan glanced at you but he only saw you eating. He silently sighed and also focus on his food.

---

It's been already a week ever since that incident happened. You were still ignoring Luhan and so did him. You always saw him with Qri, happily talking to each other.

You didn't bother them anymore since you think this would be better for you. Plus, you don't want to see them together.

Buth then, Qri was always wanted to walk with you on the way to the dorm after class. As much as you wanted to reject her, you couldn't. You really don't want to know about Luhan and Qri doing together but Qri was always telling you about it everytime she walked together with you.

One day, after class. You received 2 text messages. 1 from Luhan and 1 from Qri. \*What should I open first?\*

You decided to open Qri's message first.

*to: Sooyoung*

*I have to do something. I can't walk with you today so don't look for me. Let's just see each other tomorrow.*

*from: Qri*

You heaved a sigh, \*That was a relief. I really can't take all she was always saying though I can't stop her.\*

Then you open Luhan's message.

to: Sooyoung

Meet me at the roof top after class.

from: Deer Lulu

You raised an eyebrow, \*Am I really the one he texted or this is only a wrong sended message?\* to make sure, you did what the mesaage said.

As you reached the roof top, you saw Luhan back facing you. "Luhan.." you called.

He turned around and faced you. He was smiling. You titled your head in confusion. \*What's with him?\*

Slowly, he approached you and to your shocked, he hugged you. "Luhan.." you whispered.

"Gomawo.." you heard him said. "Eh?"

"Sooyoung-ah, I think I'm in love.." you heard him said.

Your heart beats faster than normal. \*He's in love? With who? And why is he hugging me? Wait, is he referring to me?\* before you could ask who it is, Luhan spoke again.

"No, scratch that. It's not only 'think' because I'm really in love. Sooyoung-ah, I'm in love with Qri.."

All of a sudden, a tear automatically fell from your eye.

## CHAPTER 54

Luhan released you from the hug when he noticed that you weren't responded. His eyes widen as he saw a tear on your cheek. "Sooyoung, why are you crying?"

You didn't say a word but only stared at him. Luhan stared back. \*She tell me that you want to stop then I won't hesitate to stop this. Please Sooyoung, just say a the magical word...\* Luhan hoped.

Slowly, a smile came up to your face. It was actually fake but you did your best to make it real in front of him. "I cried because of joy. I'm very happy for you."

Luhan's face fell but he didn't let you notice it.

He faked a smile, "I'm glad to hear that from my love tutor. Also, I'm very thankful to you for teaching me on how to fall in love with someone. I already confessed to her and she accept it. I'm so happy. This is all happened because of you so thank you.."

For some reason, the last words hit you. It feels like he was telling you that it's your fault. \*Well he's right. It's all my fault. I lost you because of what I have done.\*

You forced a smile, "Yeah. You should really thank me. I'm proud to have a student like you, Luhan."

He just smiled.

"I have to go now. Let's celebrate on some other time, ne?"

He only nodded.

You smiled once more before you turned around. As the time you turned around, the smile on your face faded just instant. You then headed to the dorm with a heavy heart.

The time seems so fast. You were already right in front of the dorm. You stopped there for a moment before you reached out the door knob and slowly twisted it to open the door.

"Sooyoung-ah!" "Woah! You're early today." "That's new." you heard your friends greeted you.

You only stared at them as you were still at the main door but it was already closed. You didn't say anything and just continued to stare at them.

"Sooyoung-ah.."

Yuri didn't even got a chance to finish her sentence because you already run and hugged her as you burst into tears. "Sooyoung, what happen?"

"Yuri.." you sobbed. "If you have a problem, you can tell us."

"I lost it.. I lost the dare..." you said between your cries. Yuri release you from the hug to face you. "What do you mean?"

You stared at her for a moment then another tear fell dorm from your eye, "Luhan was in love with Qri."

"Eh? How come you lost the

dare?" -Seohyun

"You actually did your dare well. You successfully did it, Sooyoung." Yoona said.

You shook your head, "Ani. I lost the dare. I lost it. I fell in love with him. I fell in love with Luhan without me noticing it." then you burst into tears again and dropped your body on the floor.

"I'm sorry. I lost it. I'll do punishment but please give me more time to do it." you sobbed.

Yuri joined you on the floor and hugged you, "I'm sorry Sooyoung. Actually, I also lost the dare. I didn't date any nerd guy. It's just that, I really can't date them." You didn't say a word and just continued crying.

Seohyun also joined the two of you and also cried, "Mianhe.. I also lost the dare. I failed in one of my math quizzes."

Next is Yoona. She cries even more than Seohyun and Yuri. "I'm really sorry but I'm dating Kai."

The 3 of you made a stopped on it and slowly turned to face her. "You were dating Kai?" Yuri asked.

"How come we didn't notice it?" -Seohyun

"Actually, we started dating since the trip in China." Yoona confessed. "Omo! You one lucky girl!" Yuri commented. "I envious you." Seohyun added.

You saw Yoona blushed. You looked away as another tear fell from your eye. Your friends immediately noticed you.

"Sooyoung, stop now." Yuri whispered. You wanted to obey her but your eyes disobeyed.

"Let's not talk about the dare. Just erase it to your mind. Why don't you tell him your feelings?"

"I-I can't. Qri already accepted his feelings. They're already together." you said between your sobs.

They hugged you again to give you a comfort though it wasn't enough but they it will calm you a bit.

The 4 of you stayed like that for a long time. Soon, you all headed to your respective rooms to take some rest. That night, all you did was to cry.

---

It was another morning again. Another morning means another day but it seems like yesterday because heart was still broken. You couldn't forget the fact that Luhan was already in love with Qri.

You attended your first 2 classes. When the third class finally came, you decided to not to attend because you still can't face Luhan yet and even saw him with Qri. You chose to stay at the library than seeing them together.

You also skipped lunch. You ask your friends a favor to make an excuse for you. Good thing, they understand you so they agreed.

Kris was kept calling you but you just ignored it and decided to turn off your phone so no one

can ever disturb you.

After lunch, you attended your remaining classes. Luckily, you didn't see Luhan nor Qri which made you felt relieved.

You were on your way to the dorm when you suddenly saw Luhan... with Qri.

Your froze. You couldn't move or say a thing. You just stared at them.

Luhan was also staring back since he was in front of you and only few meters from you as Qri was standing next to him while her arms linking at Luhan. Seems like Qri didn't notice you because she was facing Luhan like she was saying something to him.

Suddenly, she noticed that Luhan wasn't listening at her anymore. He followed his gaze. A smile automatically formed on her face as he saw you. She was about to call you but there's a guy suddenly wrapped an arm around your shoulder.

It made you jumped a little. You turned to your side but to your surprised, the guy kissed you on the lips but it was only a short kiss though. "Miss me?"

"Myungsoo..."

## CHAPTER 55

You were now lying on your bed, still awake. You were staring at the ceiling as you're mind still processing about what happen earlier. It was really unexpected.

*\*Eoteokhae?\**

*:: flashback ::*

*"Miss me?" your eyes widen as you saw Myungsoo right in front of you with a wide smile on his face.*

*"Myungsoo.." that was all you can say because of shock.*

*"Omo! Sooyoung-ah, is he your boyfriend?" Ori suddenly asked as she approach the two of you along with Luhan. You met eyes with Luhan. For some reason, his expression was hard to explain.*

*You looked away but didn't reply to Ori's question. But then, you heard Myungsoo spoken. "Yes, I'm her boyfriend, I'm Kim Myungsoo by the way."*

*You were actually shocked by Myungsoo's answer as you looked up at him. You open your mouth to say something but Luhan interrupted. "If I'm not mistaken, you're not her boyfriend anymore but her ex-boyfriend now."*

*That statement made you faced Luhan. He was intensely staring at Myungsoo. "Am I right?" Luhan added. "We didn't break up so I'm still her boyfriend. And I'm sorry, may I know who are you?"*

*"I'm Sooyoung's bestfriend."*

*Myungsoo turned to you with a*

*confused expression. Before you could explain to him, Luhan spoke again. "I become his bestfriend when you're gone for 2 years. You don't even know how lonely she was when you're gone and now, you'll just came back and think that you're still her boyfriend?"*

*"Stop." you said.*

*"Why would I stop? Wae? Don't tell me, you're going to accept him again? Are you stupid? He only breaks your heart, Sooyoung. Wake up!"*

*You didn't say a word and remained silent. Luhan faced Myungsoo again, "Neo! You better leave her alone. You broke her heart once and don't make a step to break it once again. You don't deserve her, you know that?!"*

*"I said stop." you spoke again. "No. I'll never stop until this bastard will realize what he have done to you." Luhan replied as his eyes were still staring intensely at Myungsoo.*

*"I said stop it, Luhan." you turned to Myungsoo, "Come on, let's talk somewhere."*

*You were about to leave but Luhan grabbed your wrist. Ori was shocked but she decided to remained silent the whole time.*

*"You still have a chance to avoid him so do it now. He will only make your heart broken if you choose to be with him again." Luhan said.*

*"Luhan please.. I want to talk to him.. alone." you tiredly said without looking at him but Luhan still didn't let you go.*

*Myungsoo narrowed his eyes to Luhan, "Don't you hear what she had said? She want to talk to me alone and we need to do that."*

*Luhan glanced at you. "Luhan please.." you said once more. With that, Luhan slowly let go of your wrist though he wanted you stay by his side instead of Myungsoo.*

*You looked up at Myungsoo, "Kaja." then you started to walked away from Luhan. Myungsoo followed you.*

*"Gwenchana? You look pale." Ori said to Luhan after you and Myungsoo left. "Come on, I'll walk you back to your dorm" Luhan said.*

*"Eh? I thought we're going on a date?" she asked. "You see, the gate was about to close. We can't go out anymore or we'll get caught."*

*"But you told me you have an idea how we can go back here even the gate is already closed." Ori said. "Yeah but I realized that it's not good for you. You're new here and it's not good for your record if you did that. Come on, I'll walk you back to your dorm."*

*Ori didn't protest anymore and just nodded. With that, Luhan silently walked her back to the dorm. Until they reached the dorm, Luhan didn't say a word. Ori bid him 'goodbye' and 'goodnight' but Luhan only reply a nod to her and left.*

*---*

*You and Myungsoo are now at the roof top. Myungsoo was very happy that you chose to talk to*

him.

*You were near the railings when Myungsoo suddenly gave you a back hug. Your eyes widen in surprise, "Myungsoo.."*

*"I miss you Sooyoung-ah. I miss being with you, with the only girl I love."*

*You closed your eyes to prevent a tear to fall down from your eye. Slowly, you removed his arms around your waist and faced him. "Listen, Myungsoo. It's because I chose to talk to you doesn't mean I forgot all the things that happened between the both of us. I actually want to talk to you because I wanted to ask you some questions."*

*He sighed, "Okay. I'm ready to answer those questions. Ask me now."*

*"What are you doing here? Why did you came back?"*

*"I'm here because of you. I transferred here to be with you again. I don't know what to do anymore without you by my side. My two years without was like a nightmare. It's slowly killing me.."*

*"Then why did you leave without saying a word?"*

*"Sooyoung, I know I gave you pain by doing that but I regret it. My parents forced me to study in Japan and whenever I protest about it, they wouldn't let me. I tried to escape but you know my parents, they have powers to make me follow their will. But they noticed that I became miserable the time I went to Japan. I can't blame myself because I'm actually moserable without you. My day wasn't*

*complete without you, Sooyoung."*

*"Still, you should at least mention this to me before you leave instead of leaving like a stupid. You just dumped me, you know that?!"*

*Myungsoo took your both hands, "We both know that wasn't true. I didn't dumped you, okay?"*

*You removed your hands from his grip, "But it seems like one. Myungsoo, you left without me telling this and now you're back and saying that you're still my boyfriend? What do you think of me? A toy that if you wanted to play again, you'll back and get it?!"*

*"No Sooyoung, of course not. I don't treat you like that. For me, you're the most special girl that I want to be by my side.. always."*

*"Then why do I feel like you didn't treat me like that?"*

*Once again, Myungsoo held both of your hands. "Sooyoung, can you give me a chance to prove it to you?"*

*You were shocked by his sudden question but you only remained silent. Then he spoke again, "I will do everything just to make your heart accept me again. If you want me to court you again, I'll do it again like what I've done before or maybe better than before. Please Sooyoung, give me another chance.."*

*He was very sincere as says those words. You could feel it and see it by your own. Though you hate him because of what he did to you two years ago yet there's still part of you that*

*wanted to give him another chance.*

*You stared at him for a moment, "I need to think first. I'm already tired, I want to rest." you said. "Okay, I'll walk you to your dorm." he offered.*

*"No. I want to be alone. I want to think carefully. Please give me time to think, Myungsoo."*

*"Ohh.. Araseo.."*

*With that, you started to walk but then you herd him spoke again that made you stopped, "Tomorrow, I'll start to prove myself to you. I'm not expecting for your 'yes' again but I'll do everything just to make you say 'yes' again. Jalja, Sooyoung-ah.."*

*After hearing that, you didn't said anything and just continued walking again until you reached the dorm.*

*:: end of flashback ::*

*\*Waaaaa! Eoteokhae? Why would he need to make me confuse like this? Aigoo! I don't know what to do anymore..\**

*You let out a heavy sigh and closed your eyes. Soon, you finally fell asleep.*

## CHAPTER 56

*It was already sunrise. Your eyes slowly open as the sun rays hit your face through the window. It took you some seconds before you fully open your eyes.*



Slowly, you sat up and jumped off from your bed. You took a bath and wear your uniform before you exited your room.

Your friends was already there. They're silently eating at the dining area. You decided to approach them.

"Good morning girls!" you brightly greeted them.

They didn't responded instead they gave you a look. Their expression was hardly to explain. It was unreadable for you.

"Yah, what's with you all? Stop looking at me like time. It seems like you guys wanted to kill me with those stares." you joked.

Still, they continued staring at you like what they're doing the time you approach them. "Yah, what's the matter? Did something happen?" you asked.

"What do you think?" Yuri questioned back. "Okay, I give up. Just spill it. I definitely don't have an idea." you said as you sat next to Seohyun.

"Don't lie to us. Why didn't you tell us?" Yoona asked. "Tell you what? I don't understand." you replied as you faced Seohyun with a confused expression on your face.

"Why didn't you tell us that Mungsoo came back? Are you with him again? I he your boyfriend again?" Seohyun asked.

You froze. \*They knew? How?\* "Wait, how did you guys know about Myungsoo's comeback?" you asked.

"He's here." Yuri replied shortly. Your eyes widen, "Mwo? He's here? Eodiseo?" you looked around but no sight of Myungsoo can be seen around the dorm.

"Behind the main door." Yoona replied. "You mean.. in front of the dorm?" you asked. She nodded.

You quickly stood up and were about to approach the door but you heard Yuri spoken. "You can't open the door until you answer our questions."

"Questions?"

"Is he your boyfriend again? Are you hiding your relationship with him from us? Why did you accept him again?" she continuously asked.

"No, no and a no. That's my answer. Can I go now?" you asked. "No."

"What?! I've already answers those questions." you snapped. "Why are you in a hurry? After what he did to you, you still love him huh? Then what about your feeling with Luhan?"

You were stunned by her question. You actually don't have an answer by that question but you still gave her a reply.

"I didn't say I'm chosing Myungsoo over Luhan though I know Luhan doesn't have feelings for me. I'm not going to accept Myungsoo's feelings for me that fast either. I just wanted to see how can he prove his love to me. I didn't gave him a chance yet though he wanted to start today. I know you guys are only concern to me but please.. I

need your supports for this. Just let me see what he can do." you said.

"Is your decision final now?" Yoona asked. You nodded.

"I guess we don't have a choice now girls. I think she's already finalize this. All we can do is support her." Yoona said.

You smiled at her.

"I'll go with that idea then." Seohyun said. You smiled at her too. Yuri sghed, "Do I have a choice?" she asked.

You smiled even wider, "Gomawo." you said and huggle them one by one.

"Psh! Just go. Myungsoo is waiting for you. Go to him before someone caught him outside. You know that boys aren't allowed to be here, right?" Yuri stated.

You nodded, "Thank you again." you grabbed your bag then you run towards the door and quickly open it. There he was, back facing you.

"Myungsoo.." you called. Slowly, he faced you. He was holding a boquet of flowers. A smiled automatically formed on his face as he saw you.

"Sooyoung-ah!" he called as he run towards you. He was about to give you a hug but you step backwards and looked away.

Myungsoo stopped on what's going to do. He already got it. Still, he tried to smile and instead of giving you a hug, he handed you the flowers. "White roses for you. Aren't white roses your favorite flower?" he said.

You stared at it for a moment.  
\*He still remembered..\* you couldn't help but smiled.

"You looks better when you're smiling." he suddenly said. Your smile faded as you cleared your throat. "Where did you get that?" you asked, looking away.

"I ordered it for you. I know these flowers will make you smile than seeing me, right?"

The moment he said that, you could feel that he was hurt. You stared at the roses in front of you then slowly took it.

You looked up at him. You saw him smiled. \*He's still the Myungsoo I know. he knows the things that will make me happy. For some reason, I miss this..\*

"I already accept this. Aren't you leaving now?" you asked in normal tone. He shook his head, "Ani. I'm actually here to fetch you. I want to go to the class with you."

You raised an eyebrow, "Are you saying that we're in the same class?" you asked. "All your classes are the same with me." he replied with a smile.

"MWO?! You did that in purpose, don't you?" He only smiled.

That smile already answered your questioned. You let out a sigh. "You're still the Myungsoo I know. You'll go wherever I go." you whispered but loud enough for him to hear it.

He chuckled, "It's because my heart is with you. If a person doesn't have a heart, it means he will die. Since you already stole

my heart and I don't think I can still get it back, I don't have a choice but to follow where my heart located which is you."

\*Those words was like a funny words to others but I found it sweet.. I don't want to feel this but my heart voluntarily feels it..\* you thought.

You rolled your eyes on him, "Whatever! Let's just go!" you said and started to walk. Myungsoo smiled and followed you.

While the both of you are walking, you suddenly noticed the students looking at the both of you. \*Aigoo! Why are they looking at us?\*

"Woah! So sweet." "Look, he even give her a boquet of flowers. How sweet." "And the boy is so cute. Isn't he's Kim Myungsoo? The Guitar Prince two years ago?" "Yeah but wait, look at the girl. She's Han Sooyoung, right? She was he's ex-girlfriend." "Omo! Don't tell me, they got back together?" "Well, they actually look good together."

You bit your bottom lip and just lowered your head as you continued walking. But Myungsoo noticed your worried expression. He grabbed your wrist that made you stopped. You looked up at him, confused.

He smiled at you before facing the students around. "Listen, everyone! I and Sooyoung weren't together anymore. But.." he faced you, "I'll do everything just to make her fall in love with me again." then he smiled at you again.

A sudden smile formed on your

face unknowingly. Until now, he never fails to make you smile.

The atmosphere filled with 'Ayyyiiiiiieeeee' coming from the students around.

Little did you know, Luhan was watching the scene from afar. He was narrowing his eyes to the both of you as he grip his fist tightly.

## CHAPTER 57

After the scene that happened earlier at the corridor, both you and Myungsoo headed to your first class. Myungsoo decided to sit on the empty seat in front of you since the teacher haven't arrive yet to assign him for a seat.

Myungsoo faced you while sitting in the front seat of your seat. He was staring at you.

You lowered your head, "Yah, quit staring. You're not sitting properly." you snapped. Even you were lowering your head, you could still see that he was smiling at you. It made you feel uneasy.

"Do you already eat breakfast?" he asked, totally ignoring what had you said. You were about to answer him but your stomach already answered it for you by making a sound.

You heard him chuckled. You bit your bottom lip, \*How embarrassing..\*

Just then, you saw him placed a sandwich on your desk. You

looked up at him in surprise. He smiled, "I know you can't eat because of my sudden appearance so I brought you a sandwich. Go and eat it before the class starts."

"Myungsoo.."

He chuckled, "Don't worry, I'm not going to ask for a payment. That's free." he said.

You stared at the sandwich for a moment. "Your stomach won't satisfy if you only going to stare at the sandwich." he said.

You chuckled, "Gomawo." you said as you slowly get the sandwich and started eating it. Still, Myungsoo didn't take off his eyes from you.

"Will you quit staring? I can't eat properly.." you snapped. "It's all your fault." he said with a pout.

"Eh?!"

"Because of your beautiful face, I can't take off my eyes from you. Tsk!"

You blushed.

"You're more beautiful when you're blushing." he commented. You lowered your head, "Stop teasing me.."

He chuckled, "You're still the Sooyoung I know. You are easily blushing by my words.."

You rolled your eyes then stared at him, "And you're still the Myungsoo I know. You never failed to make me smile." you said.

The moment you finished your

sentence, you met eyes with Myungsoo. You stared at each other for a moment until someone called you.

"Soyoung-ah!"

You broke the staring contest and looked at the door. Yoona was now walking towards her seat which is next to yours.

"I brought you a sand—" her words was cut off as she saw the sandwich that Myungsoo gave to you. "Where did you get that sandwich?" she asked.

"Eh?" you looked down and realized that you were holding a sandwich, "Oh this? Myungsoo gave this to me." you said and glanced at Myungsoo. He was still staring at you.

Yoona looked at Myungsoo, "Yah, quit staring. It seems like you're melting her by your stare."

Finally, Myungsoo broke his stare. He looked at Yoona, "Oh Yoona! Long time no see.." he said.

Yoona rolled her eyes, "Psh! You've only noticed me just now?" Myungsoo chuckled, "What can I do?" he then turned to you, "Your friend's beauty hynotizing me.." he smiled at you.

Again, you blushed.

Yoona looked at you. She rolled her eyes, "Whayever!"

Just then, the teacher finally arrived. She gave Myungsoo a signal to step in front. Myungsoo politely obeyed the teacher as he walked in front.

"Mr. Kim, please introduce yourself." Myungsoo nodded and faced the class. "Annyeong haseyo! Kim Myungsoo-immnida. I became a student here teo years ago and now came back to make Ms. Han Sooyoung fall in love with me again." then he winked at you. "That's all thank you.." then he bowed.

The classroom became loud because of the squealed after they heard Myungsoo's confession.

\*Aigoo! Why did he say that? He shouldn't be..\* you thought a you lowered your heard.

You felt Yoona elbowed you, "Don't fall for that." she whispered. "Don't worry, I won't." you whispered back with a smile.

"Okay Mr. Kim, please take your seat in front of the girl named Han Sooyoung." you heard teacher annoiced with a giggle.

You rolled eyes, \*Even my teacher supported him.. This is insane..\*

With that, Myungsoo walked towards his seat as he smiles at you. You just stared him.

As Myungsoo sat in front of you, you heard him spoke. "Stop blushing because of me.." he said in a low tone with a light chuckle.

You then touch your both cheeks, \*Aigoo! Am I really blushing? Omo! Embarrassing..\*

You heard him chuckled again, "I was just kidding but now I'm sure that you're going to blush

after I said this, You're beautiful than anyone else.."

He's right! Your face turned red after you heard him said that.  
\*Aigoo! Yoona, I know I said that I won't fall for that but why do I feel I am?\*

The first class ended silently. You say 'goodbye' to Yoona before heading to your next class with Myungsoo. From now on, you need to use to this. Use to be with Myungsoo all the time since you're in the same class as him until the end of class hours.

For the 2nd class, it also goes the same as your first class except for the presence of Yoona.

The time goes by immediately. Now, it's time the 3rd class. As both you and Myungsoo are heading to your 3rd class he suddenly held your hand.

You gasped in surprise as you looked at him. He wasn't looking at you. He was focusing on the way with a smile on his face. You broke your stare at him and focus on the way too.

You were about to remove your hand from him but you suddenly saw Luhan and Qri. Qri was linking her arms to his. It made you stopped that also made Myungsoo. Luhan and Qri did the same.

The 4 of you are now facing each other and did some staring contest...

## CHAPTER 58

"Oh! Soyoung-ah!" Qri broke the ice as she dragged Luhan in front of you and Myungsoo. "Hello! Myungsoo, right?" she asked as he looked at Myungsoo.

Myungsoo nodded. "I'm Qri, by the way. And this is Luhan, my boyfriend." he introduced.

You looked up at Luhan and he's also staring back at you. Luckily, you already put the flowers on your locker so he won't see it yet you started to feel uneasy because of the atmosphere around you. Your ex was now standing next to you while holding your hand while the special person who's now holding your heart was in front of you.

"Come on inside. The class will start any time soon." you said as you looked away. "Oh yeah. Kaja!" Myungsoo lead you inside the classroom, still holding your hand.

Qri and Luhan followed.

You're now sitting on your place as Myungsoo suddenly sat next to you. You stared at him. It's not because you were shocked that he sat next to you but because he's sitting in Luhan's seat.

Just then, you sudden heard a voice spoken. "Excuse me but you're sitting on my place."

You looked up, it was Luhan.

"Is that so? Oh mian." you heard Myungsoo said as he stood up and sat in the seat in front of yours instead. With that, Luhan sat on his seat.

Myungsoo did the same again. He's not sitting properly and just facing you. "Yah, you still doing this.." you whispered.

He smiled, "I can't help it. I really miss staring at your beautiful face." he whispered back but loud enough for Luhan and Qri to hear it.

"Aigoo! You've got a sweet boyfriend, Sooyoung." you heard Qri said. You open your mouth to explain but Myungsoo already did.

"I'm not YET her boyfriend but I'll do everything for that to happen." he said as he smiled at you. You forced a smile.

You glanced at Luhan but he's only looking in front. Your face fell. But then you noticed his hands. He was gripping his fist tightly. You frowned, \*What is he into?\*

Suddenly, your teacher came. It's now time for Myungsoo to introduce himself again. He introduced himself in front of the class just like how he did it on the your first two classes.

You just lowered your head as you heard your classmates squealed because of Myungsoo's sweetness. As for Luhan, you don't want to see his reaction anymore or you will just disappoint.

As Myungsoo came back, he whispered. "You're free to blush again, beautiful." Well, he never failed to make you blush

because you did. "Yah, stop calling me like that. I'm not into it.." you whispered back.

"Then get use to it from now on, beautiful.." he said. You bit your bottom lip to prevent yourself on smiling but you failed. You couldn't help it and end up smiling widely.

Little did you know, Luhan was listening to the conversation. He wanted to explode but he couldn't. As much as he wanted to punch Myungsoo, he can't because you're not his property and he thinks that you'll never be..

---

*Kriiiiiing! Kriiiiiing!*

The bell finally rang. Third classes are now ended and it's now time for lunch.

"Kaja?" Myungsoo asked.  
"Umm.. Myungsoo, I'm going to eat with Luhan and Qri." you said that made Luhan looked at you.

"Is that so? Then can I go too?" Myungsoo asked. You paused and turned to Luhan. He didn't say anything. "Okay." you shortly replied to Myungsoo.

With that, the 4 of you stepped out of the classroom then headed to the canteen.

Minutes later, all of you finally arrived at the canteen.  
"Sooyoung noona!" Sehun called as he waved at you.

You smiled. "Who are they?" you heard Myungsoo asked.  
"Luhan's friends. They are famous. They group is called EXO." you replied.

"Oh yeah! I remembered. I knew one of them." he said. You looked up, "You do?"

He nodded, "The guy called Lay. He can play guitar too. I remembered we played guitar together in one event here in school two years ago. Don't you remember?"

You frowned, \*He played guitar with Lay? How come I couldn't remember?\*

Myungsoo chuckled, "You know why? Because you're too busy focusing on me that's why you don't noticed him. Psh! You silly.."

You looked up at him, "I did?"

He nodded, "It's because you couldn't take off your eyes from me." the he winked. You rolled your eyes but laugh after a while.

Accidentally, you met Luhan's eyes but he quickly looked away. You frowned, \*Weird..\*

"Come on, my friends are waiting." Luhan said. With that, the 4 of you approach EXO and your 3 friends that were already sitting at the usual place.

You introduced Myungsoo to them. EXO warmly greeted him. Myungsoo is right! He really knows Lay. You can see it the way Lay talked to him.

You sat next to Kris as Myungsoo on your other side. Luhan in front of you as Qri in front of Myungsoo. Okay, it was awkward positions.

As the time Myungsoo sat, your friends remained silent and just

focus themselves in eating.

"Yah, what happen to you girls. Why did you guys become silent all of a sudden?" Xiumin asked.

No one answered him. Yuri, Yoona and Seohyun only continued eating silently.

"I guess they're still mad at me." you heard Myungsoo whispered. You let out a sigh, "You can't blame them. Even me, I'm still mad at you." you wgisered back.

He pouted cutely.

\*Cute.\* you thought but you only rolled your eyes on him and secretly smiled as you lowered your head.

"Don't mind the girls. Let's just eat." you heard Kris said. You glanced at him but he avoided your gaze and started his food.

\*Is he also mad at me? aigoo!\*

you let out a silent sigh and continued eating.

"I need an explanation." you suddenly heard Kris wgispered. You glanced at him, "Eh?"

"What exactly going on?" he asked. "I can't explain here." you said, lowering your voice as you took a bite on your food.

"Later." he said. You didn't reply at him anymore and make yourself busy on your food.

Suddenly, Myungsoo placed a steak on your plate. You turned to him and titled your head in confusion. "Eat a lot. I love watching you eating as much as how I love to stare at your beautiful face." he said with a smile. You bluhed immediately.



“Woah! Look at her, she’s blushing!” Baekhyun commented with a playful smile on his face. “Psh! She wasn’t blushing. It’s because today is hot. Right noona?” Sehun asked.

You just smiled a little. “See.. She smiles because I’m right.” Sehun said as he made a face at Myungsoo.

Myungsoo only chuckled, “Seems like that kid likes you.” he whispered to you. You chuckled, “I like him too.” you whispered.

“MWO?!” Myungsoo reacted in a bit high voice that made him caught EXO’s, Qri’s and your friends’ attention.

You laughed at his reaction. “I was just kidding!” you snapped, still laughing. “Woah! She’s laughing because of him.” D.O. said.

“No she’s not!” Sehun, Kris and Luhan said in unison.

That reaction made you stopped on laughing. All of you got stunned by that. Your friends suspiciously looked at Luhan and even to Kris.

Qri slowly stared at Luhan, surprised. Myungsoo taken a back by the sudden reaction. EXO raised their eyebrows by their 3 friends.

“Ohh.. I don’t think she’s laughing because of him.. That’s all.” Luhan said and continued their food again. Kris cleared his throat, “Same goes with Luhan.” he explained.

Now, all of you looked at Sehun’s direction. Sehun made a

face, “She wasn’t laughing because of him. That’s all.” he then continued his food.

His friends laughed at the maknae except Luhan and Kris.

You cleared your throat, “Let’s just continue our food. Lunch break will end anytime soon.” you said. Everyone nodded and did what you said.

As all of you finished the food, you heard Kris whispered. “Text me later. I need your explanation.” then he stood up and headed back to his class.

With that, all of you went to your separate ways. No one from your friends talk to you. They’re still mad at Myungsoo that they couldn’t approach you.

As you and Myungsoo arrives at the classroom, you immediately texted Kris. You explained all that happened on your text message.

After some minutes, he texted back.

*to: Sooyoung*

*I think all I can do now is to support you. BUT be sure that you’re going to make a right decision. This will be for your own love life. Always remember that.*

*from: Kris*

---

The time quickly goes by. The school day is now ended. It’s now time to go back to the dorm.

“I’ll walk you to your dorm.”

Myungsoo offered. You wanted to reject his offer but he already walked ahead you. You let out a sigh and followed him.

In the middle of the walk, you suddenly saw Luhan walking on the opposite direction. “Oh. Luhan, right?” Myungsoo asked.

You saw Luhan nodded. “Did you walk your girlfriend to their dorm too?” Myungsoo asked.

Luhan glanced at you. You looked away. “Yes, I did.” you heard Luhan said. That answer broke your heart.

“I’m doing the same with Sooyoung too.” Myungsoo said. Luhan nodded, “Okay. I’ll go first.” with that, he completely left.

Myungsoo turned to you, “Kaja?” You forced a smile and nodded. With that, you both continued walking until the both of you arrived in front of your dorm.

“Thanks for walking me here, Myungsoo.” you said. He smiled, “Anything for you, beautiful.” he replied.

You were spacing out so you totally ignored what he said. You turned around and was about to enter the dorm but Myungsoo grabbed your wrist that made you faced him again.

Before you could say anything, Myungsoo kissed your forehead. “Goodnight, beautiful.” with that, he left.

You were left there, dumbfounded. You blinked a couple of times until your mind finally sunk. Myungsoo was already gone on your sight. A

small smile suddenly formed on your face.

You were about to open the door again but someone grabbed your wrist again. You smiled, \*This guy is really something. Aigoo! Myungsoo..\* you turned around to face him but to your shocked, he wasn't Myungsoo but..

"Luhan.."

"Let's talk."

## CHAPTER 59

You're now at the roof top with Luhan. There was a silent atmosphere around there. No one open a topic yet.

"Are you happy?" Luhan suddenly broke the silence. You turned to him, "Eh?!"

He wasn't looking at you as he repeated his question. "Are you happy with him?" he asked once again.

"You, are you happy with her?" you questioned back. "What?"

"After Qri became your girlfriend, it seems like you abandon me. It seems like you abandon your own bestfriend."

"You know it wasn't the truth."

"Just answer my question. Are you happy with her?" you asked. \*Please say no and I will confess now..\*

There was a pause before you heard him said, "Yes, I'm happy. Qri is a very cheerful girl and it's impossible for me to not to fall in love with her."

That statement broke your heart. That statement made your mouth shut. You couldn't say anything for response. You didn't know how to react for that.

"How about you, why don't you answer my question now? Are you happy with him?" he asked.

"The Myungsoo who returned is still the Myungsoo I used to love before. He still never fails to make me smile. He still know the things that will make me happy. So.. Yes, I'm happy with him. I guess." you replied with a lie.

"Did you accept his love again?" he asked, looking at you.

You shook your head, "No. I didn't. I still wanted to see what else he can do to prove his love to me."

"Is there chance for you to accept him again?"

You paused, "As for now, I don't want to say any expectations yet. My decision was still undecided."

"Are you sure you're really happy with him?" \*Just say no and I won't let you go anymore. I won't give you back to him again.\*

"Like what I've said, he never fails to make me happy."

"You're not answering my question straight to the point."

"As for now, I'm happy when I'm with him." Luhan's face fell. "Is that so?"

You nodded.

"Okay then. I'll support you for your any decision you'll make. I'm still your bestfriend, anyways. If my bestfriend is happy, I am too."

\*Yeah! I heard that word again. We're only bestfriends. I shouldn't forget about that..\* you sadly thought.

You forced a smile, "Yeah! I'm very happy to have a supportive bestfriend like you. So.. It's getting late now. I leave first."

Luhan only gave you a nod. With that, you completely leave and went back to the dorm.

As you open the main door, you saw your friends waiting for you there. They were worriedly gazing at you. You couldn't help it anymore which made you burst into tears.

"Sooyoung-ah.." Yoona hugged you, "What happened?"

"We made a talk. Luhan and I.." you sobbed, "He still doesn't have feelings for me. He said he was happy with Qri so I did the same thing. I told him that I'm also with Myungsoo.." you cried even more.

Yuri and Seohyun joined the two of you on the hug. "Just cry it out. You will feel better in that way.." Yuri said as he gently patted your back.

They let you cry tonight to make you feel better. They didn't ask you anymore and just gave you a warm hug. They wanted hug

you until you feel better.

---

On the other hand, Luhan went back to his dorm with a heavy heart. It's already past midnight when he decided to go back.

He straightly made his way to his room. He found Kris sitting at his own bed while reading a book. Since he was busy reading, Luhan headed to his bed and laid there.

"You're in love with her, aren't you?" Kris suddenly spoke while he was still busy on his book.

Luhan turned to his friend's direction. "Yes, I'm in love with my girlfriend. It's not hard to fall in love with Qri."

Kris closed his book and slowly faced Luhan. "Don't talk to me like a fool, Luhan. We both know that I'm not talking about Qri. I'm talking about the girl you met before you got here. I'm talking about Sooyoung."

Luhan's eyes widen, "How did you know that I'm with her before I got here?"

"Like what I've told you before. I know lot of things about you Luhan. I can see it by your actions. Even the only picture of Myungsoo with Sooyoung, I know that you're the one who stole it."

Luhan stared at his friend in shocked, "Yah, are you watching every action I make?"

"Honestly, yes but about the picture, I don't actually have an idea that it's with you. It happens that I've got to see it on

your drawer when I'm looking for my things." Kris explained.

Luhan remained silent. "I'm not going to ask why did you stole that picture but I wanted you to tell me, you're in love with Sooyoung right?"

Luhan was very shocked by his friend's words that he was hearing right now. He lowered his head, "Since when did you found out about this?"

What Luhan shock the most was Kris' answer for that question.

"About two years ago.."

## CHAPTER 60

"Since when did you found out about this?" Luhan asked.

"About two years ago.." Kris bluntly replied.

Luhan stared at his friend in shock, "H-How.. did you know?" he asked, stammering.

Kris faced Luhan, "The way you look at her. I already saw it since two years ago. I already saw how you adore her when you look at her. You're not like that to the other girls and even Qri. Honestly, I was shocked when I saw you with her the day when we (EXO) followed you. I didn't expect that you were already meeting her. Actually, I have no idea how you met her but there's one thing that I know," he paused for a moment before saying, "...she's special to

you because you're in love with her."

"But she only sees me as a friend." Luhan said in a low voice.

"How did you know? Did you ask her what she feels towards you? Did she already told you that you were just a friend to her? Are you sure that the thought on your mind was the truth? Do you really think that she wasn't in love with you?" Kris asked.

Luhan was stunned by his friend's words. "Then, what are you trying to say now?" he asked.

"What I'm saying is, why don't you confirm it by yourself. Try to ask her. Confess to her." Kris said. \*I don't want to tell you what Sooyoung feels towards you. I wanted you to be a man and do it by yourself. I can only help the both of you like this..\*

"But.." Luhan was about to say something but Kris already cut him off.

"If you really love her, you're ready to know her answer. Whether you'll get rejected or not. Well at least you told her what you really feels. What if she feels the same? At least you don't have anything to regret. Confessing is the best way for you to get better." Kris said.

Luhan think about it for a moment. \*Do I really need to confess to her? What if she'll hate me after I did that?\*

"Always think positive. As a friend, I wanted to advice you. Just confess to her and be ready for her answer. Goodnight."

with that, Kris lay back on his bed and closed his eyes.

Luhan glanced at Kris for a moment and sighed. He also laid on his bed. \*I can't believe I'm in love with the same girl 2 years ago and until now..\*

:: flashback ::

*It was Monday. This is the usual day for the girls to give their gifts to all EXO members. Ever since then, Luhan was nowhere to be seen. He wasn't that cold-hearted that time. He was cheerful though he was easily get annoyed when he was surrounded by te girls.*

*Every Monday, Luhan disguise himself to escape to the girls. He will looks like a different person when he did that. He actually looks like a nerd.*

*One Monday, it was Lunch. Luhan was walking at the corridor while he was on his disguise. Suddenly, he accidentally bumped to someone. A girl with her two friends on her both sides.*

*Luhan bowed at her, "Mian." Then he saw the girl glared at him, "Watch your way NERD! How disgusting! Tsk!" then the girl pushed Luhan aside that made him fall on the floor.*

*Luhan frowned at her. The girl rolled his eyes, "Don't look at me like that! You nerd!" then the girl fixed her uniform, "Aish! My unoform is now a mess. Come on girls, let's look for EXO instead of talking with thia nerd." with one last glare, the girls left.*

*Luhan watched the back of the girls as they walk. \*What a*

*pathetic girl. If she only know that I'm one of EXO, she wouldn't do this. I think doing disguise is better. Well at least I'm seeing how the girls threat the different kind of persons.\* he thought as he slowly stood up.*

*When he was about to walk, he accidentally bumped to someone again. Luhan face-palmed himself. \*How many time do I need to bump to others and get insult by them?\**

*He frowned at the girl he bumped to. "Mian.."*

*Luhan was shocked. He's not the one who apologized but the girl in front of her. The girl bowed, "Mianhe. I didn't mean to make your uniform wet." she said.*

*\*Wet?\* Luhan examined his uniform. He finally realized what the girl is saying. The girl accidentally spilled her juice to his uniform.*

*He was about to speak but the girl spoke again. "If you want to, I'll treat you lunch for return."*

*"Eh?"*

*"Come on, I'll treat you lunch!" the girl said again as she pulled Luhan along with her.*

*Luhan stopped that made the girl stopped. "Wae?" the girls asked. "I don't want to eat at the canteen." he replied.*

*"Eh?"*

*"I don't want anyone to see me." he said as he lowered his head. "Araseo." the girl beamed.*

*Luhan looked up at her, \*Is she going to leave me without giving me a lunch? So.. she's also the same with the girls hmm..\**

*"Wait me at room 512, I'll be there after some minutes." the girl said with a smile. Luhan stared at her in surprised.*

*Before he could ask the girl, she already walked away. \*What she did say? Wait her at room what? 512? Why there? Oh! I'll just use the elevator..\* with that, Luhan made his way to room 512.*

*He sat in one of the chairs inside the classroom. He waited for the girl there like what she said.*

*5 minutes had already passed. She still nowhere to be seen.*

*10 minutes, still no sight of the girl.*

*\*Aish! How can that girl fool me?! Aigoo! I'm being stupid here waiting for that girl!\* he stood up and was about to open the door when the door burst open and revealed that girl.*

*"Where are you going? Didn't I told you to wait me here?" she asked. "Oh.. I thought you're not coming back anymore." he said.*

*The girl smiled, "I have my words and I'll do whatever I've said." she lifted the pastic that she was holding to show to Luhan, "Here's the food. Kaja!" then she dragged Luhan to sit.*

*Luhan only stared at his food. "Aren't you going to eat? Don't worry, I didn't put any poison on it. I'll just bought it at the canteen." the girl explained.*

*\*This is the first time that a girl didn't insult me with this disguise..\* Luhan smiled at her, "Gomawo.." then he started his food.*

*"It's nothing but your uniform. It was already have a damage.." she said in a low tone as she gazed at his uniform.*

*Luhan followed his gaze. He smiled at her again, "No need to worry. It's okay. Besides, I'm already okay with the food. It tastes good."*

*"Chincha?"*

*Luhan nodded. Finally, the girl smiled. \*Yepeoda..\* Luhan admired her beauty.*

*"Go and eat." she snapped. "How come you don't have a food? Aren't you hungry?" Luhan asked.*

*"Don't worry about me. Just eat your food."*

*"I don't think I can forgive you.." Luhan suddenly said. "Mwo?"*

*"Before I completely forgive you, you need to join me with this food."*

*"But I bought that for you only because of what I did. I can't eat with you."*

*"You treat me a food because you were guilty on what you did, right?" Luhan asked. The girl nodded.*

*"Then eat this with me."*

*"But—"*

*"I insist. Or do you want me to*

*not forgive you?"*

*The girl smiled, "Araseo but now I'm forgiven hmm?" Luhan nodded as he smiled back.*

*With that, the girl joined him. She was about to use the fork but Luhan already did so she's now using the spoon instead.*

*Suddenly, the girl's phone rang.*

*"Yeoboseyo?" "Oh! Myungsoo, are you finish with your practice?" the girl brightly smiled, "Chincha? We can eat lunch together today?" "Ne, araseo. I'll be there. Bye."*

*Luhan stared at her, \*She's very happy when she talk to that Myungsoo..\**

*"Nugu?" Luhan couldn't help it but ask her. "Uh.. That's my boyfriend." she simply replied.*

*"Y-Your boyfriend?!"*

*The girl nodded, "Um.. I'm sorry again about the incident earlier. I have to go now. Finish your food, ne?" she stood up.*

*Luhan didn't answer her anymore. "Bye!" with that, the girl darted outside the classroom. Luhan was about to ask the girl's name but she was already gone.*

*Ever since that day, Luhan stopped his disguise. The nerd every Monday is now died. Luhan already kill him. That nerd will never appear again in front of everyone or even to that girl.*

*Luhan always looked at that girl from afar, secretly. He usually saw her with his boyfriend, Myungsoo. He knows him*

*because he is the Guitar Prince at this school along with his friend, Lay.*

*Everytime she saw that girl with that Myungsoo, it will always broke his heart. Ever since he met her, his heart never stopped beating for her.*

*And ever since he found out about her relationship with Myungsoo, he became cold to anyone especially with the girls. He never wanted to get close to any girl like how he get close to you. After that incident, Luhan became a cold-hearted person...*

*:: end of flashback ::*

## CHAPTER 61

### > LUHAN'S POV <

I can still remember how I met her 2 years ago. It was totally unexpected. It was Monday, the day that I hate the most. You know why? Because of the noise. I hate the noise that was coming from the girls that chasing us, EXO. So, I decided to disguise myself during Mondays.

That disguise did help a lot. Everytime I did that, no one could ever recognized me as Lu Han. I was just an ordinary nerd student whenever I disguise myself.

Though it wasn't turned out to be good sometimes like one time, everyone ignored me like I didn't exist in this world. They keep bumping at me and insult



me. Well, I did not care at all! I think it's better than to reveal who really I am. They will go after me for sure especially the girls.

Until that day came, the day I first met my love tutor with the named Han Sooyoung. To be honest, I have no idea who she is until our world crossed.

That day, I bumped to someone. Well.. they are actually 3 girls. I apologized but as expected, they insulted me especially the one that I bumped to. I wanted to punch her that time but I didn't. She's still a girl, that's what I thought and I don't hit girls that's why.

But then after they left, I bumped to someone again, a girl. This time, I really want to scold her but she spoke that made me stopped on doing so. She apologized first. I don't actually used to it because I'm always the first person who apologized whenever I bumped to someone while I'm on my disguise.

I looked at the girl who I bumped to. She's very simple yet her beauty was adorable. I wanted to say something but I couldn't find the right words for return.

"Mianhe. I didn't mean to make your uniform wet." I heard her said that to me. Wet? I thought. I looked down on my uniform and then I realized what she was saying. Still, I didn't say anything.

But then she offered me a lunch for return on what she did. I stopped her because I don't want anyone to see me. They will only insult me if I did. But the next thing she said surprised me.

She told me to wait her at room 512 then she left immediately.

I wanted to ask her why but she was already gone. Since I have nowhere to go, I did as she told me to do. I waited for her at the place she said. I waited 10 minutes but still, I can't see any sight of her around the classroom.

I was about to leave the classroom but the door suddenly open and reveal that girl. "Where are you going? Didn't I told you to wait me here?" that was her question.

I told her that I thought she won't come back anymore. She smiled at me and dragged me back inside the classroom to eat.

I also realized that she bought a food for one person only so I offered her to join me. At first, she rejected but then eventually, she agreed. She was about to use the fork but I grabbed it first. It will be hard for her if she used the fork so I reserved the spoon for her.

That time, I thought I already found the right girl that will give the color of my life but I guess I'm wrong. While we were eating, someone suddenly called her on the phone.

I heard a boy's name at their conversation and I couldn't help it but ask her though I'm not sure if she's going to answer my question or not but she did. She said that it was her boyfriend. Yes, the person from the other line was her boyfriend. His name is Myungsoo. I knew him because of my friend, Lay. They used to perform guitar at school but I never thought that this girl is his girlfriend.

She bid her goodbye to me after that phone call. I wanted to stop her. I wanted to be with her the whole day or even everyday. I know it's crazy because I only knew her that day but what can I do? I think I've fallen for her in just quick minutes.

I was about to ask her name but I was too late. She was already gone. That day, I was already rejected even though I didn't confess yet. She's already have a boyfriend and I can't change that fact.

Ever since that day, I stopped my usual thing every Mondays. I didn't put my disguise on anymore. It feels like it reminding me of my quick time with her and it's hurting me the most that I can't be with her because she already have someone else. After that incident, I became different. Even my friends saying that and I can't change it anymore. That heartbreak changed me.

Now, I can only look at her from afar that no one can notice but I'm wrong because Kris was there. No matter how I secretly look at that girl, I've never noticed that Kris was also secretly watching my every action. I almost forgot that I have a suspicious friend like him. But why do I feel that he knew something that I didn't know?

I hate seeing her with that Myungsoo guy. I hate seeing her smile I know that she was only smiling because of him. I hate myself because I can't do that. I hate it whenever I saw her alone with her. I really hate it!

Also, I hate to see her crying because of him. I thought he

won't let her cry but I'm wrong. He suddenly went to Japan without her knowing.

When I saw her crying, I wanted to approach her. I wanted to hug her to make her feel better. I wanted to make her smile because of me. I want to do those things but I couldn't because I'm not that brave to do so.

After that bastard left, the usual smile on her face wouldn't appear anymore. I could see that her friends are trying to cheer her up but it wasn't enough to make her happy like before. I saw her smiling but I know it's fake. She's only doing that because she doesn't want her friends to worry about her.

It's been already 2 years since then but I'm still in love with this girl. What exactly you did to make me fall hard to you like this?

2 years had already passed but my feelings for is still the same like two years ago. I tried to approach her again but I can't. I'm not brave enough to do that.

Until one day, our world crossed again for the 2nd time. It was unexpected like how I didn't expect our first meeting. Someone sending weird letters to me.

Honestly, I wanted to throw it when I received the first letter but there's a part of me that telling me not to.

Finally, I caught the person who's sending me weird letters. I was shocked, VERY shocked when I saw the girl I'm in love with in front of me holding the same paper that my sender using

everytime I received a letter.

Though I knew that girl, I kept myself calmly with the same expression. The Cold-Hearted Luhan taht everyone knows. Right at that moment, I could feel that she was scared. I wanted to talk to her calmly but I can't because she will get suspicious so I remained to my usual thing of being cold.

On our second meeting, I've finally got to know her name. Han Sooyoung, that name fit her well.

I know I'm selfish but I really want to get close to her again so I took this chance and ask her to help me with the 'Teaching to fall in Love' thingy. Whether it turned out good or bad, I don't care. Well at least I took this chance to get close to her.

Also, I choose room 512 for our every session because I'm hoping that she will remember me but I think she didn't. I was in disguise in that time and I look like a nerd so who will remember that kind of creature right? No one..

But I never thought that I will get close to her more than I thought. We became bestfriends for real though I wanted more than that status. Beause of our second meeting, I know that I can't stop myself on falling for her anymore.

I know that we became closer to each other because she's going to teach me how to fall in love. There's no need to that anymore because she already did it 2 years ago. She already teach me to fall in love with her.

And now, I took this chance

because I wanted to teach her to fall in love with me. I will do everything to make her fall in love with me.

I thought I can do that because we're happy when we are together but I guess I'm wrong. When Qri came, it feels like she's giving me to Qri. She said that Qri's the right girl for me but she's wrong because on the very first place, the girl with the named Han Sooyoung was only girl that my heart wanted.

Since she started it, I continued. She wanted me to be with Qri, I did. I thought if I did that, she will realized that she's in love with me but then again, I'm wrong because on the first place, she wasn't in love with me. She will never fall in love with me if she's still in love with her ex-boyfriend.

Her smile before, I saw it again but not because of me but beause of Myungsoo again. I wanted to be happy with her but I can't. Everytime I saw her smiling because of another man, my heart burst into pieces. It feels like there's a knife stabbing my heart.

Kris told me to confess to her but I don't know if it is right if I do that. Should I really confess to her?

Now, I'm with Qri and she's with Myungsoo (?) Is this really our fate? To be with someone else?

## CHAPTER 62

It was morning again. Luhan

woke up on time as well as Kris.

“Do you made up your mind now?” Kris asked. Luhan stared at him and paused for a moment before he nodded, “Ne. I’ll confess to her later.”

Kris smiled, “Finally, you’re going to do the right thing.” he said. Luhan smiled, “Yeah. Just wish me luck.”

Kris stood up, “I don’t think I still need to do that but since you requested it, I will. So, goodluck Luhan.” he patted Luhan’s shoulder before he went from their room.

Luhan took a deep breath, “Yeah. Goodluck to me...” he whispered before he followed Kris outside.

---

On the other hand, you were already preparing yourself for school as well as your friends.

After an hour, all the 4 of you stepped out from the dorm.

You looked around, looking for someone. “Sooyoung, are you looking for someone?” Yuri suddenly asked. You looked at her, “Eh?” then you shook your head, “Ani.”

You looked around once more. You let out a sigh for relief. \*Thank God, Myungsoo didn’t come.\*

“Sooyoung?”

You turned to the direction of the voice. It was Qri. She was smiling as she approach you. “Uhh.. Qri.”

Your 3 friends looked at you worriedly. They worried about your feelings. They knew that you’re hurting everytime you see the girl that owns Luhan’s heart.

“Luhan texted me and he told me he can’t fetch me today. Umm.. Can I walk with you guys?” she asked.

Your 3 friends glanced at each other before they looked back at you again.

You smiled, “Of course, you can. Kaja!”

Qri beamed and nodded. With that, your friends didn’t say anything anymore and just silently walk behind you and Qri.

“Luhan told me about Myungsoo. He said Myungsoo is your ex-boyfriend and now he’s back. Are you with him again?” Qri suddenly asked.

You paused then shook your head, “Ani.” you replied shortly.

“You know what? I could see that he was sincere to you.” Qri said again.

“I know.”

“Then why don’t you accept him again? You’ll be lucky if you got together with him again. You two looks good together.”

Yuri was about to join the conversation but Yoona held her back. “Qri doesn’t know anything. Always remember that.” she whispered to Yuri.

Yuri sighed, “Aish! How I wish she never appear in our lives.” he whispered. “But she already

did.” Seohyun said.

The 3 of them remained walking behind you and Qri. They keeps themselves calm and not to join the conversation or they will only make things worst.

On the other hand, you didn’t gave Qri another response on her statement. Actually, you doesn’t want to talk about Myungsoo and even Luhan at this moment. You wanted your mind to rest of thinking many things.

Just then, you finally arrived at your first class with Yoona. “Come on, Sooyoung.” Yoona called.

You nodded, “Ne.” you faced Qri, “I’ll go first. See you around.”

Qri smiled and nodded. With that, you entered the classroom with Yoona. “Gwenchana?” you heard Yoona asked you. You nodded, “Gwenchana.”

“Are you sure?” she asked once again. You only nodded.

Yoona was about to say something when someone’s arm suddenly wrapped around your shoulder. You looked up, “Uhh.. Myungsoo..”

He smiled, “Did you sleep well?”

\*No, not really.\* You forced a smile, “Ne.”

“That’s good to hear.” he said.

Yoona rolled her eyes, “Class will start anytime soon. We better go to our seats now.” then she left.

“Tss! She still mad at me.”  
Myungsoo said. “What would you expect?” you snapped.

Myungsoo pouted and sighed, “Well at least you’re not mad at me anymore, right?”

“Mwo?”

Myungsoo smiled and shook his head, “Nothing. Come on, let’s go to our seat.” then he dragged you to sit.

The teacher came just after the both of you sit on your respective seats.

---

Time quickly goes by. It’s now time for the 3rd subject. English is your favorite subject but this class is definitely not your favorite.

Still, you headed to your 3rd class with Myungsoo. Qri and Luhan was already there.

“Kaja?” Myungsoo asked.

You looked up and slowly nodded, “Ohh..”

The both of you entered the classroom and headed to your respective seats. As usual, Qri greeted you. You forcedly greeted back.

Myungsoo was facing you while he was sitting on his seat in front of yours. You gestured him to sit properly but he didn’t. He only keeps his eyes on you.

You lowered your head lightly, still not used to it. But at the corner of your eye, you could see that there’s someone also

looking at you besides Myungsoo. It was Luhan.

\*Aigoo! I’m going to die by their stares. Luhan stop that. You’re making it hard for me to forget my feelings for you..\* you thought.

“Good morning class!”

Finally, the teacher came. Myungsoo fixed himself on his seat and focus on the teacher. That was a relief for you but Luhan’s stare at you didn’t stopped.

Still, you wasn’t looking back. You remained silent on your seat and tried your best to focus on the class.

Eventually, Luhan also focus on the class after some minutes of staring at you. You silently sighed in relief.

Soon, the class ended. It’s now time for lunch.

“Sooyoung, I can’t eat lunch with you today. I have something important to do. Mianhe.” Myungsoo said.

You shook your head, “Ani, it’s okay. I understand.” you replied and smiled. “Gomawo. So, I’ll go ahead now.” he said. You nodded then he left.

“Where is he going?” Qri suddenly asked. “He has something important to do. He can’t go with us.” you said.

“Come on, others must be waiting for us now.” Luhan interrupted.

Both you and Qri nodded. The 3 of you then left.

---

“Sooyoung, over here!” you saw Yuri waved at you. You looked up and smiled.

You, Luhan and Qri approach them. There are only 4 empty seats and the worst is, those are in one place. The first empty seat was beside Kris so you took it.

Unexpectedly, Luhan sat next to you and Qri next to him.

\*Why did he sit next to me? Aish!\* you nervously thought.

“Good thing, you wasn’t with that Myungsoo guy, noona. I really don’t like him with you.” Sehun spoken.

You only chuckled.

“Don’t be around him again, ne?” Sehun said once more. “I can’t.” you honestly replied.

All of them stared at you in surprised especially Luhan and even Kris.

“Wae? Don’t tell me, he’s your boyfriend again?” Sehun asked in panic.

You chuckled, “Ani.”

Luhan silently sighed in relief as Kris smiled. “They why?” Suho asked.

“Myungsoo and I were in the same classes so it’s impossible for me to be not around him.” you explained.

“Ohh.. I thought you accepted him again.” Sehun said. The others laughed at the maknae’s

reaction.

“But I think Sooyoung is happy with Myungsoo.” Qri suddenly stated. All the attentions shifted to her.

“I don’t think so.” Yuri snapped. “Nado. I don’t think she’s happy with him.” Kris agreed. “Yeah, agree to them.” Sehun beamed.

“Yeah. She wasn’t.” Luhan suddenly said that made all of you remained silent and stared at him.

Luhan slowly gazed at you. He was about to ask you to have a talk with him but the noise around stopped him on doing so.

“KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!! He’s so hot!” “That Sooyoung girl is so lucky!!!” “IKR?! How I wish I have a guy like him to court me like that! Kyaa!”

That was all you heard around the canteen. \*What exactly happening. Are talking about me?\*

“Oh! Look, she’s here!” a girl pointed at you. “Me?” you pointed to yourself. “Yeah. Go to the quadrangle and find it by yourself.” the girl said as she gestured you to go.

You stood up and immediately went out from the canteen and did what the girl had said. EXO and the others followed you.

Then there he was, Myungsoo was playing guitar at the quadrangle. At first, he didn’t noticed you. Just then, he finally found your direction as a smile automatically formed on his face.

Myungsoo then started the song.

It was a love song. Actually, your favorite song. He used to sing it to you before and this is one of the reason why you fall in love with him.

All you did was stared at him, not moving and just watched him performing.

As the song ended, you heard the girls squealed because Myungsoo is now slowly walking towards your direction. Still, you wasn’t moving but your eyes wouldn’t leaving him.

Right at this moment, Myungsoo is now in front of you. He looked at you straightly in the eyes. You stared back.

“Sooyoung, I know you still mad at me. I know I hurt you once and I won’t let it happen again, ever. I know that I’m confusing you by my sudden appearance but if only you know, I’ve been waiting for this to happen. I’ve been waiting to back with you again. And now that I’m here again, I don’t want to lose this chance, I don’t want to lose the only girl that owns my heart. I don’t want to lose you again.” he paused then,

“Han Sooyoung, will you be my girlfriend... again?”

## CHAPTER 63

“Han Sooyoung, will you be my girlfriend... again?”

That question made the people around you remained in silent

and even yourself. There you are, staring at Myungsoo without saying anything.

Slowly, you looked around and saw a very familiar pair of eyes on the scene, it was no other than Luhan. He was staring at you but you couldn’t read his expression.

Just then, Qri suddenly appeared on the sight. You saw her hugged Luhan’s arm as she smiled at him. Then she turned to your and Myungsoo’s direction, “How sweet they are, right Luhan?” you heard her said as she smiled to Luhan again.

You slowly looked away, not wanted to see them together anymore. You then faced Myungsoo and stared at him for a moment.

“I know you were shocked by what I did just now and I know that you weren’t ready yet so I’ll respect if you won’t acc—” before Myungsoo could finished his sentence, you cut him off.

“Yes, I’ll be your girlfriend again.”

There was a silence in the atmosphere for some seconds until the students around started squealing because of the sweet scene that they’re watching right now.

Still, Myungsoo wasn’t reacting. He was tenderly gazing at you that made you feel a little bit uneasy. Just then, you saw him smiled.

After you saw that smile, you found yourself smiling back. Slowly, Myungsoo lean forward until his lips met yours. With no reason, your eyes started to



close as you let Myungsoo to kiss you.

You wanted to forget the pain on your heart. The scene of Qri and Luhan wouldn't stop playing on your mind. You wanted to forget Luhan so you let yourself kissed Myungsoo back.

On the other side, Kris was face-palming himself as he saw the scene. \*Is this the end?\* he turned to Luhan's direction, \*Is he really a man? Is he going to just stand there and watch the girl he love kissing someone else? Tss! Luhan, you now lose your chance and I can't you anymore..\*

---

*Krrriiiiiiiiiing!*

The bell rang that remarks for the end of lunch time.

"Let's go. I'll walk you to your class." Luhan said to Qri as she held her hand and dragged her out of the scene.

Qri gazed at their holding hands. She smiled, \*This is the first time he hold my hand first instead of me first. And it feels different. I felt butterflies on my stomach. I think I'm falling for him even more. Even I didn't got a chance to et lunch today, I'm alright. I'm not hungry anymore because when he held my hand, it gives me lot of energy than the food giving me..\*

Meanwhile, Myungsoo let you of your lips and smiled. "You have no idea how happy I am right now. I can't believe you accept me again. I promise, I'll never leave you anymore." he

said sincerely.

"I know." you replied shortly.

"I didn't expect that I'm going to use the whole lunch time for this but it's worth it. Come on, let's skip our next class. We'll eat lunch first. I know your already hungry." he held your hand and was about to walk to the canteen but you stopped him.

"I'm not hungry and I don't want to skip class. Can we just go to our next class?" you asked.

Myungsoo nodded and smiled, "Anything you want." with that, the two of you headed to your next class.

---

The time goes by quickly. All the classes are now ended. It's now time for all the students to go back to the dorms.

Since Myungsoo is now your boyfriend, he walked you back to your dorm to make you safe. The both of you walked there hand in hand though your mind wasn't focusing on that. You were deeply in thought but Myungsoo didn't noticed it because he couldn't stop himself on his happiness he was feeling right now.

"Good night Sooyoung, sleep well and dream of me." Myungsoo happily said as he lean in and kissed your forehead. "Bye."

You only replied him a nod. Myungsoo smiled at you once more before he completely out of your sight.

You let out a long sigh before

you finally entered the dorm. Right after stepped inside the dorm, 3 pair of eyes landed on you. Well.. you were already expecting this to happen.

"Why did you accept him again?" that question greeted you by Yuri. "Because I love him." you simply replied.

"Are you trying to fool us, Sooyoung? You don't love him anymore." Yuri snapped.

"And the one you in your heart now is Lu—" Yoona didn't finish her sentence as you spoke, "Don't mention him."

"But you love him right?" Yoona asked. "For now, yes but my feelings for him will eventually go away." you said. Seohyun was about to join the conversation but you spoke again, "And as for now, I don't Myungsoo but I know that this is the right decision I can do. I think this is the best way for me to forget my feelings for him. I'm doing the right thing. Myungsoo and I, we used to be together and we can back how we used to be before."

"But Sooyoung..." -Seohyun

"It will happen," you slowly faced them, "...if you guys give all your support to me."

"How can we do that if we knew that you love someone else?!" Yuri hissed.

You smiled, a fake smile. "That someone also loves someone so I need to forget my feelings for him before I couldn't stop it anymore. All I need is the support coming from my friends, from the 3 of you. Let's not talk about it now. I'm

already tired. I want to take some rest. Goodnight.” with that, you headed to your room and let your mind to rest.

---

On the other hand, Luhan walked Qri to her dorm. The walk was silent until they reached the dorm.

“Thank you for the walk. I’m going inside now.” Qri said. Luhan only gave her a nod as a response.

Qri stared at him for a moment then let out a silent sigh, “Goodnight.” with that, she finally entered their dorm.

As Qri disappeared from his sight, he turned around and was about to leave but he stopped halfway. He glanced back, not to Qri’s dorm but the dorm where you are staying.

With a sigh, Luhan looked in front again and started to walk away.

While he was walking on the way to his dorm, he suddenly saw Kris. He stopped and so did Kris. There are only centimeters away to each other. They’re eyeing each other.

After only a minute, Kris walked towards Luhan and gave him a punch on the face that made Luhan fall on the ground. His face turned to the aide because of the impact of the fist of Kris.

Luhan touch the left corner of his lips as he felt a blood on it. He was right, it’s bleeding. Slowly, he looked up to face Kris.

“Are you really a man huh?! How could you let that happen?! Now, what are you going to do?! You can’t do anything because you’re not brave enough to confess to her!” Kris grabbed his collar to stand his up and gave his another punch but this time to the other side of Luhan’s face.

Still, Luhan didn’t do anything. He just let Kris punch him like that.

“Do you really love her?! Answer me!!!” Kris shouted but not too loud. He was still aware to the people inside the dorm around the two of them.

Still, Luhan didn’t say anything.

Again, Kris punched him two times. “Now, do you know the answer of my question huh?! Or do you want me to punch you another one?!” -Kris

“Y-Yes, I love her! I really love her! And I hate myself of being like this! Of being weak when it comes to my feelings for her! I hate my life without her!!!” Luhan half-shouted as his tears started to fall down.

Kris only stared at his friend.

Luhan half-consciously looked at Kris, “I deserve it, I deserve many punch so punch me again to wake me up by doing stupid things like this.”

After Luhan said that, Kris gave his one last punch without any hesitation. It made Luhan fall on the ground again.

Kris glared at him, “Now, I’m hoping that I wake you up by being stupid, Luhan. Just follow your happiness. Honestly, I don’t want to talk to anymore

because I’m annoyed to have a stupid friend like you. And since I already said it. As one of your friend, I wanted you to fight for her. I’m not saying this because I wanted to but because you need to.” Kris fixed his uniform then held out his hand, offering for Luhan.

Luhan weakly smiled but took his friend’s hand. Kris pulled him up, “You better do what I’ve said before you completely lose her.” with that, he walked off first.

Luhan watched his friend’ back for a moment, \*My face was hurt because if his punch but my heart is hurting more than the punch I get from him. I think he was right. I need to do what I need to do and I’m not going to lose a chance anymore. I’ll fight for her...\*

With that, Luhan half-consciously followed Kris back to the dorm.

## CHAPTER 64

Another day came again. It was Saturday means no classes. It was actually a pleasure to you since you still didn’t know how to face everyone after what happen yesterday.

You’re now awake but you weren’t getting up from your bed yet. It’s not because you’re still sleepy, it’s just that you don’t want to. You still didn’t how to explain your situation to your friends.

But still, you need to. You forced yourself to get up and

went out from your room. Since Seohyun wasn't inside the room, maybe she's already outside.

You were right. Your friends already awake but they look like they're going out. They weren't wearing normal clothes so maybe they're going somewhere.

"Are you guys going out? Can I come?" you asked brightly.

They all stare at you. No one spoke for a moment until you heard Yuri said, "You can't come."

"Eh?" you tilted your head.

"Your boyfriend is waiting for you outside." Seohyun said.

"Myungsoo is waiting for me? As in right now?" you asked in panic.

"Yes. That bastard is waiting for you." -Yuri

Yoona elbowed her and whispered, "Yah, watch your words. Myungsoo is his boyfriend now."

"Wae? I'm just calling him the word describing him. Besides, I don't like him with her. Psh." -Yuri

"Yah, low your voice. Sooyoung is still in front of us." Seohyun snapped as she glanced at you.

You fake a smile, "No, it's okay. I'm going out first." you were about to approach the main door but Yuri snapped you.

"No. We're going first. Let's go, Yoona, Seohyun." then she started to walk off. Still, Yoona

and Seohyun didn't move.

"Yah, Yoona, Seohyun let's go!" Yuri called.

"Uh-oh.." Seohyun glanced once more at you before she followed Yuri while you heard Yoona sighed and looked at you, "We'll going now."

You only gave her a nod then finally followed Yuri outside.

You also followed since you need to approach Myungsoo in front of the dorm. You saw Yuri glared at him before she completely walk passed by him. Seohyun and Yoona only gave him a glance as they passed by.

\*Eotteokhae?\*

"Good morning, Sooyoung."

You snapped out your thoughts when you realized that Myungsoo already approached you. You forced a smile, "Good morning. What brings you here?"

"Waeyo? Can't I visit my girlfriend in the morning?"

"Oh.. Ani. I mean, look at you. You dressed well." you pointed out.

"Right. Go and get ready. We're going out." he commanded.

"Eh? Eodiga?" you asked.

"You'll see. Just go and dress up."

You just stared at him. He smiled, "Don't worry. We're only going out for a date. I'm going to kidnap you or anything.

You're now my girlfriend anyways."

Still, you kept staring at him.

"Palli, don't waste the time. Go and wash." then he pushed you back inside the dorm.

You lightly smiled and nodded. "Gurae, wait here while I'm preparing myself." He smiled widely, "Okay." then he sat on the couch.

With that, you started to walk. But then, you stopped halfway as you glanced back at him. \*Gomawo, Myungsoo. I'll try my best to return you my love..\* then you finally entered your room.

---

"Ready?" Myungsoo asked as he saw you already dressed up when you went out from your room.

You smiled and nodded.

Myungsoo motioned his arm, offering for you. He turned to you and smiled, "Kaja?"

You beamed and linked on his arm, "Kaja!"

As the both of you stepped out from the dorm, your smile quickly faded. There he was, Luhan standing right in front of you as you met his eyes.

"Can I talk to you, Sooyoung?" he spoken.

Myungsoo glanced at you then back to Luhan, "Can you do that next time. We're going out on a date today."

“Sooyoung?” Luhan totally ignored Myungsoo as he only looked at you.

You only stared at him.  
\*Eotteokhae?\* “Sooyoung, please?” -Luhan

“Luhan,” you started. Luhan focused his eyes on you only.

Then you continued, “Mianhe but I’m busy today. You heard what Myungsoo said, we’re going out on a date. Let’s not talk for now.”

“But—”

Before Luhan could finish his sentence, there’s another voice snapped the conversation.  
“Luhan?”

You, Luhan and Myungsoo turned to the direction of the voice. You saw Qri walking towards the 3 of you.

“What brings you here Luhan? Are you going to ask me out? Gurae, I’m free.” Qri said.

You glanced at Luhan and so did him. Qri hugged Luhan’s arm, “Good morning Sooyoung, Myungsoo.” she greeted.

“Good morning.” -Myungsoo

You only gave her a forced smile as a response. You looked up at Myungsoo, “Let’s go. Time is running.”

He smiled and nodded, “So, we’ll go off first.” then the both of you started walking.

You were about to walk passed by Luhan but you couldn’t because he stopped you by doing so as he grabbed your

wrist.

You froze. Slowly, you faced him. “We need to talk.” you heard him said.

“Mian. I’m going out with Myungsoo. Let’s just talk some other time but not now.”

“Sooyoung..”

“Luhan please.. Not now.” after you said that, you slowly removed his hand from your wrist then hugged back Myungsoo’s arm. With that, you and Myungsoo completely leave Luhan and Qri.

Qri stared at Luhan. “Qri, I don’t want to go out today. I want to take some rest the whole day.” with that said, Luhan left.

Leaving Qri, dumbfounded.

---

“Gwenchana?” Myungsoo worriedly asked as the both of you entered his car.

You smiled, a fake smile. “Ne, gwenchanayo.” you replied.

Myungsoo reached out your hand and gently squeeze it as he smiled. You just returned him a smile.

With that, the car droved off.

On that day, Myungsoo brought you to the amusement park. This is the first place that Myungsoo brought you when you become his girlfriend before and now, this is the first place he brought you as his girlfriend again.

But.. it’s not the same like before anymore. Yes, he was in

love with you and both of you are together again. But still, you’re not in love with him anymore but with someone else.

This is hard but you kept yourself looks happy around Myungsoo so he won’t get suspicious. You tried your best to enjoy this day with him although you wasn’t, really.

The day ended immediately. Both you and Myungsoo went back to school as he walked you back to the dorm. You bid him goodbye and you thank him for this day.

As you entered the dorm, you found your friends already sleeping. You silently sighed and silently entered your room.

Your eyes caught the deer stuffed toy that Luhan gave you in China. You slowly went on your bed and hugged the stuffed toy.

A tear unknowingly fall down from your eye as you fell asleep while hugging the stuffed toy.

## CHAPTER 65

### [ Sooyoung’s (you) POV ]

I don’t know what to do anymore. Seems like my heart will explode anytime soon because of what I’m feeling right now.

When I saw Luhan this morning, I wanted to hug him. I wanted to talk to him. I wanted to take care of him. The moment are eyes met, I could feel how my heart

beating very fast for him and only for him.

I saw some bruises in his face that time. I wanted to ask him where did he get that but I can't. I don't want to go near him again or I can't stop this weird feeling that my heart is feeling towards him.

But there's a question in my head that I couldn't find the answer.

Why Luhan wanted to talk to me this morning?

Hayy.. Now, I'm curious. If only I agreed to talk to him...

**[ End of Sooyoung's (you) POV ]**

---

Monday came fast. You did your daily routine then headed to your first class. Your friends were nowhere to be seen around the dorm.

\*They're still mad at me..\* you silently sighed.

"What's with that sigh?"

You jumped a little by the sudden voice. You turned around and saw Kris. "Ohh.. Kris."

"So, why are you sighing?" he asked.

"Nothing."

"Guraeseo? By the way, where's your so-called boyfriend?"

You gave him a look, "Yah, Myungsoo is my boyfriend now so scratch that so-called

whatever!"

Kris rolled his eyes, "Yeah. Yeah. So, where is he?"

"I told him to not fetch me anymore. We both have the same classes until the school hour ended so I told him there's no need to do that."

"Tss." You raised an eyebrow at his reaction. "Waeyo?"

"I can still say that you're in love with Luhan by doing this."

After you heard him said that, you quickly covered his mouth and glared at him, "Yah, watch your words. Someone might hear you. Shut up, okay."

Kris removed your hand from his mouth, "Psh! Why don't you just confess to him?" he whispered.

"Mwo?! I can't. He already has a girlfriend and the same situation with me because I already accepted Myungsoo."

You heard him sigh, "Same and lame reason."

"What?" you asked, confused.

He only shook his head, "Nothing. Just go to your class before you get late. I have to go also. See you at lunch." then he went off.

You did as he told as you headed to your first class.

Time really came fast. It's now lunch. What happen during the 3rd class?

Well.. Honestly, nothing happened. You could feel how

Luhan wanted to talk to you yet he didn't. Qri was around so maybe that's why. All you just did was focus on the class. Luckily, you did it well. Now, the 4 of you were walking to the canteen.

"You guys, go first. I need to use the rest room." you said. "Do you want me to wait for you in front of ladies rest room?" Myungsoo asked.

You shook your head and smiled, "There's no need for that. Just go first and I'll follow after I use the rest room."

"I can go with her. I need to use the rest room too." -Qri

The 3 of you turned to her. She just smiled.

"Okay, go with Qri then." - Myungsoo

Luhan only remained silent the whole moment.

Qri turned to you, "Kaja?" You smiled and nodded. With that, the both of you headed to the rest room.

Myungsoo and Luhan left alone together. "Come on. Let's just wait for the girls at the canteen." Myungsoo said.

"You go first. I still have something to do. I don't know if I can eat lunch with you guys today. Just tell this to others for me." Luhan replied.

"How about Qri?"

"I'll call her later." with that, Luhan completely leave.

---



“We haven’t talk nowadays. You must be very busy with your boyfriend huh..” Qri started a conversation as the both of you were walking towards the rest room.

“Ohh.. Mian. I’m just busy nowadays..”

“Psh! No need to explain. I know you wanted to have time with your lover.” she teased.

You just gave her a smile, a fake one. “Yeah.. Maybe.”

“Oh! We’re here already. Come on, let’s use the rest room.” -Qri

You nodded then followed her. There’s 2 girl students also inside the rest room. There’s only one free cubicle. “You go first.” you said.

“Are you sure?”

You nodded.

“Okay. I’ll make it quick.” with that, she entered that cubicle. Just after some minutes, Qri stepped out.

“You can use now. Umm.. Can I just wait for you outside?” -Qri

You nodded, “Yes, you can.” with that, Qri went out as you used the cubicle. As you were inside, you heard the other 2 doors of the cubicle opened. Maybe the 2 girls finished using it now.

Just then, you suddenly smell the scent of perfume. Your eyes widen, \*Omo!\*

“Woah! I like your perfume. What brand is it?” “Secret.”

“Waeyo? I wanted to try it too.”  
“Just give me your hand.”  
“Hmm..” “There. Be contented by that.” “Psh. Do I have a choice but anyway, thanks.”  
“Your welcome friend.”

You heard their conversation then you heard their foot steps go away.

---

Qri was waiting for you outside as she saw the 2 girls went out from the rest room but something caught hee attention. She suddenly noticed that the girl locked the door before she closed it. Qri blocked their way.

“Waeyo?” -girl 1

“Why did you lock the door?”

“Huh?” girl 2 asked as she glanced at her friend.

“I saw you locked the door.” Qri said to girl 1.

“No, I didn’t locked the door.” - girl 1

“Let’s see.” then Qri aproached the door and she’s right, it was locked. “Now, are you going to deny it huh?”

The girl 1 crossed her arms acrossed her chest, “You know what? You don’t have any business about it. The girl inside, she deserves it.”

“Mwo?! What are you saying?!” Qri asked.

“Wait! Is Han Sooyoung the girl inside?” -girl 2

“Yes, she is. Why?” -Qri

“Omo! Mina, what did you do? Eoteokhae? Yah, go and open the door.” the girl 2 said to girl 1.

“Shut up, Nana. If she die today, she will be happy because at least he gst close to EXO and even become the Guitar Prince’s girlfriend. Come on, we don’t have any business here anymore.”

The girl was about to go but Qri held her back, “What did you do to my friend?!”

“Nothing.” then the girl walked off. The other girl glanced at Qri before she followed her friend.

But Qri held her back also, “Tell me, what your friend did to my friend?”

“I’m sorry.” the girl 2 said a she lowered her head. “Tell me, what’s going on please?” -Qri

“My friend spray perfume inside the rest room and Sooyoung might die because of it. She has hypersensitivity towards perfume if I’m not mistaken.” - girl 2 then she left.

Qri froze, \*She might die? No!!!\* Qri approached the door again, “Sooyoung?!”

No response.

“SOOYOUNG! SOOYOUNG, OPEN THE DOOR, PALLi!!”

“Qri...” she heard your low voice inside.

---

You were already a bit unconcious inside a you heard Qri’s voice outside the rest

room. You responded but in a low voice because you were having a hard time to breathe.

“Sooyoung, can you open the door?” you heard Qri asked. You didn’t say anything but you tried your best to approach the door yet you failed.

Qri was panicking outside. She pulled out her phone and started to dial.

---

Luhan sighed many times at the roof top as his phone suddenly rang. He saw Qri’s name on the screen of his phone. He was hesitating if he’s going to answer it or not.

\*I should explain it to her. She must be lookinh for me now.\*

Right after Luhan placed the phone to his ear, he already heard Qri spoken. “Luhan, Sooyoung needs help.”

With that, Luhan ended the call and hurriedly darted to the ladies rest room. He found Qri knocking the door.

“What’s going on? Where is she?” Luhan continuously asked. “She’s inside and someone sprayed perfume inside. Sooyoung is in danger.” Qri nervously replied.

“Fuck!” Luhan approached the door. “Sooyoung, did you hear me? Sooyoung? Open the door!” he called as he continuously knocking the door.

“Luhan..” that was he heard from you inside the rest room.

---

You heard Luhan’s voice behind the door.

You tried your best to speak, “Luhan..”

With that, everything went black.

---

“Qri, get the key. Palli!” Luhan ordered. Qri quickly did it because of Luhan’s shout.

After some minutes, Qri went back with the key. She get it from the janitor of the school.

Luhan immediately open the door amd found you lying on the floor. “Shit.” he cursed as he quickly put you on his back, giving you a piggy back ride.

“Luha—” Qri was about to approach Luhan but he was already passed by her as you were unconsciously on his back.

Qri silently sighed as she watched Luhan walked away with you. She then went to the others to tell it to them especially Myungsoo.

---

You slowly open your eyes, still a bit tired. Right after you open your eyes, the sight of Myungsoo greeted you.

You carefully sat up as Myungsoo helped you. You stared at him for a moment, maybe you were seeing a different person.

You shoulders fell as you confirmed him as the real Myungsoo. \*I thought Luhan

was the one who saved me...\*

“Gwenchana?” he asked.

You slowly nodded, “Gomawo... for saving me. I thought I was going to die.”

Myungsoo held your hand, “That’s not going to happen. I won’t let that happen. Also..” You turned to him, waiting for him to continue.

“..you don’t need to thank me. Thank Luhan. He’s the one who saved you. I’m very thankful he was there to save or I don’t know what to do if I lose you again.” -Myungsoo

\*Luhan saved me? I’m not hallucinating.. Luhan is really the one who saved my life..\*

## CHAPTER 66

It’s been already 1 and half months since that incident happen. You talked to Qri on what exactly happened that day.

:: *flashback* ::

*“How’s your feeling now? Gwenchanayo?” Qri asked.*

*You nodded, “Yes, I’m perfectly fine. Umm.. Qri,”*

*She faced you the moment she heard her name from your voice. And so you continued, “Can I ask you what happened that day?”*

*“There’s a girl student sprayed perfume inside the ladies rest room and she locked the door.*

*She did it on purpose because I've talked to her that time. Luckily, her friend wasn't bad and told me what's happening inside. She also told me about your attraction towards perfumes. The moment she said that, I panic. I don't know what to do so I contacted Luhan. He's the only one that crossed on my mind that time. I was surprised when he came quick and the others weren't with him as he came. He did all his best just to save you. He even shouted at me and I was really stunned because that's the first time I saw him like that. He's really worried about you. Luhan really cared for you."*

*Honestly, you didn't know how to react by that statement. \*He shouted at Qri? But why?\* that's the only thing on your head. You were confused by Luhan's action. \*And he's worried? Maybe because I'm his bestfriend.\**

*"What happened to the girl?" you asked.*

*"After Luhan brought you to the clinic, he confronted the girl and immediately kicked her in this school. She's no longer studying here."*

*"Mwo?! Luhan did that?! Aish! That guy is really stubborn!!" you muttered.*

*"No, he's not. He's just worried about you." Qri muttered.*

*You turned to Qri who's looking back at you. "Qri, can you say my 'thank you' to him for me?"*

*"Why don't you do that by your own? Why don't you thank him personally?"*

*You shook your head, "No, I can't."*

*"But why?"*

*"I can't say it to you or to anyone else. Just do it for me, please Qri?"*

*Qri only stared at you.*

*"Please?" you repeated.*

*You heard her sighed, "Okay. I'll do it.*

*You smiled and held her both hands, "Gomawo, Qri. Gomawo..."*

*:: end of flashback ::*

Until now, you haven't talk to Luhan. Though how many times Luhan approached you, you always ignored him. It's not that you wanted to ignore him forever, you just only wanted to not to talk to at this moment. You're still not ready to talk to him yet.

---

The end of semester is coming. Everyone is busy for making their plan for the sembreak.

Today is now the last day of the class. Luhan decided to talk to you again but then again, you went home immediately.

He was about to go to your dorm but Qri called him, "Luhan!"

He turned around and saw Qri walkong towards him. "Can I talk to you?" Qri asked.

"As in now?" -Luhan

Qri nodded, "This is important."

Luhan stared at her for a moment then sighed, "Okay. Kaja." then they walked off to the roof top.

---

There was a silent in the atmosphere as Luhan and Qri reached the roof top. Both of their arms are resting at the railings while they're staring at the scenery in front.

"I'm going back to China." Qri finally started the conversation.

Luhan stared at her in surprise. He didn't expected this.

Qri smiled, a fake one then faced Luhan. "But before I go, I wanted to ask you a question. Do you really love me?"

Still, Luhan just stared at her without saying anything. He remained silent because he doesn't know how to answer that question.

Again, Qri smiled and her gaze went back in front. "You don't have to answer that. I already know the answer. But Luhan," she paused.

Then she continued, ".do you love Sooyoung? Not as a bestfriend but as a girl?"

That question made Luhan froze. Before he could react, Qri spoke again.

"No need to answer that question also. I think I already know the answer. I know you do. To be honest, I came here because of you. When I met you in China, I fell in love with you. You can call that 'love at first sight'." she chuckled, "That's

old, I know but that's the truth. You know what? I'm very happy that I've met you. You gave me happiness even it's just a short time. There are times that I kept convincing myself that I'm the one you're in love with but everytime I saw you looking at Sooyoung, it's different the way you look at me. The way you look at her, I already knew that she's the one that you love and not me. And now here I am, you gave me a heart break. I'm not mad at you or anything. Honestly, I'm glad that you let me love you. Gomawo. Thank you for letting me love you, Luhan."

"Qri..." Qri faced him and smiled, a sad smile. "Can I hug you for the last time?"

Luhan paused for a while then nodded.

With that, Qri hugged Luhan tightly. She remained silent for a moment until there's a sob could hear from her. She's now crying.

"Let me hug you a little bit, Luhan. Let me cry on your shoulder for now."

Luhan lightly glanced at her and slowly hugged her as he gently patted her back. "I'm sorry, Qri." he whispered.

Qri shook her head while she's still hugging Luhan, "No Luhan, I'm sorry. Because of me, you're having hard time. Mianhe.." he said between her sobs.

Luhan only continued to pat her back. They stayed like that for a moment until Qri spoke again, "Now, I'm ready to let you go."

She then broke the hug and

faced Luhan, "I'm willing to give you to her. So now, you should make a move before you completely lost her."

Luhan only stared at her.

"So, I think this is a goodbye for both of us. I'll never forget you and also the others. I'll treasure all the moments I've share with you, all my happy moments with you." she lean in and gave a peck on Luhan's lips. "Goodbye, Luhan.." with another tear fell on her eye, she left.

Luhan wasn't mad because of what Qri did. Actually, he's sorry because he only used her. He just watched Qri walked away.

\*I hope you'll find the right guy for you. The right guy who's willing to love you back. I'm sorry for what I've done. Minahe, Qri..\*

## CHAPTER 67

"Are you sure with your decision?" Qri asked Luhan as they out of the school.

Luhan paused for a moment before he replied to her. "Yes. I think this is better. I need enough time to finalize my decision. I need enough time to think for the mean time. I don't want to ruin anyone's relationship. I don't Sooyoung to get confuse if I confess. A vacation in China is the best for me at this moment."

"Do you really think that

Sooyoung doesn't have feelings for you?" -Qri

"She already have Myungsoo and he's the one she love."

"Are you sure, Luhan?"

Luhan stared at her in confusion. "Eh?"

Qri shook her head and silently sighed, "I guess you really need enough time to think and finalize all this. I hope you'll get the right conclusion soon."

"Come on, let's get a taxi to go to the airport." -Luhan

"Aren't you going to bid your goodbye to them?"

"I already did. At first, EXO disagreed but they can't stop me on doing this. Kris also wanted me stay here and to fight for Sooyoung but I told him that I need time to think about confessing. Besides, I've already decided this. My family also expected me to stay with them this sembreak."

"How about Sooyoung? Aren't you going to say goodbye to her?"

Luhan shook his head, "I don't want to. I can't see her before I leave. If I did, I don't think I can still go to China." Qri just silently sighed.

"TAXI!" Luhan called as he saw a taxi coming. Both Luhan and Qri get in the taxi. With that, it departed.

---

"This is the last time that we're going to see each other. Do you

want to go out with me today?”  
Luhan asked as their airplane landed in China.

Qri smiled and shook her head, “No, there’s no need. If we did that, I don’t think I can still let you go.”

“Are you sure?”

Qri nodded and smiled, “Hmm. Can I just hug you for the last time, Luhan?”

Luhan smiled and slowly nodded. With that, Qri stepped closer to him and hugged him tightly. “Gomawo.” Qri whispered.

They stayed like that for a moment until Qri broke the hug. “I wish you goodluck for whatever your decision is. Goodbye, Luhan.”

With that, Qri slowly turned back and walked away. Luhan watched her back with a silent sigh. \*I wish you goodluck too for your love life. And also for me, I hope I’ll get my decision here in China.\*

Luhan ride a taxi on the way to his home. In just an hour, he finally reached their mansion.

**“Welcome home, Luhan!”**

Luhan taken a back by the sudden voice. It was her naughty mom. He looks around, **“What’s with this?”**

**“You’re back so I prepared all your favorite foods.”** Mrs. Lu beamed.

**“Your mom is really excited to see you again. We’re glad that you decided to have a vacation here during your sembreak.”**

Mr. Lu suddenly appeared behind his mom.

Again, Luhan taken a back by that. **“Yah, how long did you stay behind mom?”**

**“Hmm.. About half an hour?”**

Luhan rolled his eyes, **“Yeah. Whatever! Let’s just eat.”**

**“Didn’t you bring Sooyoung?”**  
-Mrs. Lu

That question made Luhan stopped. He slowly turned to his parents but looked away immediately. **“I’m hungry. Let’s eat.”** that was all he said and went for a seat.

Mr. and Mrs. Lu glanced at each other then to Luhan. Slowly, they followed their son at the dining area.

**“Did something happened between you and your girl?”** - Mr. Lu

Luhan paused, “She’s not my girl.” then he continued his food.

Mr. and Mrs. Lu glanced at each other once again. This time, they didn’t ask Luhan anymore about you. They could feel that Luhan has a problem and he doesn’t want to share it at this moment.

---

“Kris, did you know where’s Luhan? Qri suddenly disappeared. Is she with Luhan?” you asked as you make a phone call with Kris.

“Didn’t you know?” -Kris

“Know what?”

“Qri went back to China.”

“What? How’s Luhan then?”

“Uh-oh.. Umm.. Actually, Luhan went to China too but—”

You didn’t let Kris to finish his sentence. After you heard him said that Luhan and Qri went to China together, you already ended the phone call.

It feels like you’ll get a sick anytime. Seems like there’s a knife stabbing your heart. Your tears fell down from your eyes all of a sudden.

“Sooyoung?”

You quickly wiped your tears aa you heard that familiar voice. You turned around and saw Myungsoo walking towards you.

He hugged you. “Myungsoo..” you whispered.

“I don’t want to leave. I wanted to stay with you this sembreak.”  
-Myungsoo

“What are you saying, Myungsoo?” you asked, confused.

“My parents wanted me to go to Japan and spend my whole sembreak with them.” You broke the hug and stared at him, “Then go to them.”

“Sooyoung, I don’t to leave you anymore. I don’t want to go far from you.”

“Myungsoo, it’s not like you’re going there forever. You’re still coming back, right?”

Myungsoo nodded.



You smiled, "Then go there. Your family must be expecting you to come."

"Can you come with me, Sooyoung?"

That question made you paused. But you still answered it, "You know I can't. Just like your family, my mom is also expecting me to come back to our home town."

"Then, can I come with you?"

You held his both hands, "Myungsoo, your family is waiting for you there so you shouldn't let them wait for nothing."

Myungsoo sighed, "But I don't want to be separated with you again.." he whispered.

"You'll be staying there during sembreak only and besides, we're going to see each other again after sembreak, right?"

Myungsoo stared at you for a moment. "But the flight is tonight already."

"I'll go with you up to the airport then."

Myungsoo smiled, "Cheongmal?"

You smiled and nodded.

That night, you did as you promised to him. You went to airport with him to at least you're the one he saw for the last time before he went off.

---

"Where did you guys plan to go this sembreak? Are we going to

our vacation house again?" Yuri asked as the 4 of you were inside the dorm.

They're not mad at you anymore. They just understands you since you were their friend.

"I can't. I want to go back to our home town." you stated.

"Eh? I thought you only going there during summer?" -Yoon

"I just want to see my mom. I miss her already.." -you

Seohyun was about to ask you another question but Yuri already gave her a hint to not to do it. "Okay. I hope you have fun there. Your mom must've miss you too."

You just nodded and smiled.

On the next day, you prepared all your things on going back to your home town. Honestly, you've really miss your province, your mom and your younger brother there.

---

"Omnia!" you called as you finally arrived at your place. You saw your mom cleaning the surroundings, outside the house.

She looked up and an automatic smile formed on her face as she saw you. "Sooyoung-ah!"

You run to her and immediately gave her a tight hug. She hugged you back, "What brings you here all of a sudden."

"I miss you, omnia." you silently whispered. "Nado." you heard her replied as she patted your back.

She was about to break the hug but you stopped her, "Let me hug you for a moment." as you said that, a tear suddenly fell from your eye.

Your mom already feel your problem. She is your mom, what would you expect?

Minutes later, the both of you broke the hug. Just in time, you wiped your tears so your mom won't get worry.

"Where's Minwoo?" you asked.

"He's inside and he have visitor with him." your mom replied with a smile.

You smiled back, "I want to see him." Your mom nodded and the both of you went inside the house.

You saw Minwoo at the living room with a girl. Minwoo noticed you immediately, "Noona!" he stood up and quickly gave you a hug.

You chuckled, "Minwoo.."

"I miss you, noona."

"Yah, your visitor is staring at us." you snapped.

With that, Minwoo quickly let you go. You chuckled by his reaction.

Minwoo approached the girl and bring to you, "Noona, this is Tia. My girlfriend. Tia, she is my older sister. Sooyoung noona." he introduced.

Your eye widen, "Your girlfriend? Omo! You grow up now." you commented.

Minwoo rubbed the back of his head shyly. “Yah, you’re blushing.” you said.

“Noona!” he whined.

You chuckled and faced Tia, “Hello! I’m Sooyoung, Minwoo’s sister.” you waved a little.

“Annyeong haseyo! Tia-innida. Minwoo’s g-girlfriend.” she politely bowed.

You chuckled, “Aigoo! You’re stammering. Don’t be nervous, I won’t bite. Besides, you’re already my younger brother’s girlfriend so act naturally around me. Also, just call me unnie.”

Tia smiled, “Ne, unnie..”

You smiled, “That’s good to hear.” you turned to Minwoo, “Go and accompany her. I’ll unpack my things on my room first.”

“Ne, noona. Kaja, Tia!” then they both went back to their seats and continued their business.

“Come on, I’ll help you.” your mom said. You smiled and nodded. But before you could completely go inside your room, you glanced back at Minwoo and Tia.

You saw them happily talking with each other. \*Can I be happy like them too?\*

With that, you started unpacking your things on your room with the help of your mom.

While you were unpacking, you suddenly saw the deer stuffed

toy that Luhan gave to you. You stared at it for a moment.

Suddenly, you felt warm around your body. You looked up and realized that your mom is already hugging you.

“Omma..” a tear fell down to your cheek.

“If you have a problem, you can always share it to me. I’m always ready to listen.” - your mom

With that, you told her everything.

---

“**Mom, what are you doing?**” Luhan asked his mom as he saw her at the living room.

“**Ohh.. I was just checking our photo albums. Come here, join me.**” Luhan nodded and sat next to her.

“**Look, you’re so cute here.**” Mrs. Lu said with a giggle as Luhan smiled at his picture.

“**Look, Luhan! You have many deer stuffed toy around you. You looks like a deer here also. So cute..**”

That picture made Luhan stunned. He just stared at the picture with no reaction. He suddenly remembered you.

“**Mom,**” he finally started. Mrs. Lu turned to him, “**Hmm?**”

“**Why there are stuffed toy around me at that picture and why they’re all deer?**”

Mrs. Lu raised an eyebrow, “**Wait, don’t tell me you didn’t**

**know what’s the ‘Lu’ on your name means? “What?”**

Mrs. Lu rolled her eyes, “**Lu means deer. You should always remember that. Aish!**”

\*Lu means deer?\*

:: flashback ::

*“Why deer?” Luhan finally spoke, breaking the silence.*

*You turned to him, “Eh?!”*

*“Of all the stuff toys there, why did you like deer the most?” he asked. You paused then replied him a question, “Before I answer that, can I ask you something?”*

*He just nodded.*

*“Do you know the meaning of your name?” you asked. He simply shook his head.*

*“Well, the answer for your question is, I chose deer because this remind me of someone.” you stated. “Who?” he asked with curiosity.*

*You smiled and stood up, “I need to sleep now. You too.” with that, you started to walk. Confused, Luhan only watched you walk away but you suddenly stopped halfway though you didn’t look back. Your back was only one facing him.*

*And then you spoke, “Try to search for the meaning of your name. Everyone’s names have different meanings so try to know yours. Good night.” with that, you finally went upstairs then entered your room.*

:: end of flashback ::

“Aish! I’m so stupid!” Luhan cursed as he stood up. Mrs. Lu stared at him in shock. **“Yah, what’s with you?”**

Luhan held his mom’s hand, **“Mom, book me a plane ticket to go back to Korea.”**

**“What?!”**

**“Mom, I need to go back to Korea. I need to see Sooyoung.”**

**“Psh! You should’ve told me that you wanted to see her so I’ll stop questioning you already. Aish!”** Mrs. Lu pulled out her phone, **“Hello? I need a plane ticket to Korea. Yeah, tonight. Okay, bye.”**

**“Mom?”**

**“You have a flight tonight.”**

Luhan immediately gave her mom a hug. **“Xie xie, mom. Xie xie.”**

Mrs. Lu chuckled, **“Psh! Just do your best to get your girl. I want to see you with her when I visit you to Korea. Understand?”**

**“I will mom, I will. I don’t want to lose her ever again.”**

**“I know. Go and pack your things now. I’ll just tell about this to your dad later.”**

Luhan nodded and went upstairs to pack his things. After packing, he dialed Kris’ number.

“Kris, I need your help. Is Sooyoung there? Ani? Where’s she then? Their home town? Is she with Myungsoo? Okay,

okay. Wait, did you know their exact address? Can you ask it to Yuri, Yoona or Seohyun? Please, I need your help. I need to see Sooyoung. Okay, I’ll wait for you to send the address. Thank you.”

---

Morning came, you woke up early to clean the surroundings. This is actually your usual thing to do whenever you’re staying at your home town.

“You want me to help you?” you heard your mom asked as she went out from the house.

“Ani. I’m fine. Just take a rest inside. I already cook breakfast. It’s on the table.” you said.

“Are you sure?”

You nodded, assuring her. She smiled, “Okay then. Just go inside if you get tired.” she said. You nodded then she went back inside.

While you were cleaning outside, in front of the house, you suddenly noticed a pair of foot a bit far from you. It made you stopped on cleaning as you slowly lifted your head.

You froze.

You’re now seeing the person you’ve miss so much. The person that owned your heart. The person that giving you pain yet giving you weird feelings at this moment. That person is just a centimeters away from you right now.

It was Luhan. He have luggage with him that made you confused. He was straightly staring at you as you stared

back. The both if you stayed like that for some seconds until Luhan finally made his way towards you.

After some seconds, he’s now in front of you. The moment he made the last step, Luhan pulled you into tight hug.

You were surprised but you still forced yourself to speak though it’s only a whisper. “Luhan..”

But then you heard him said,

“Bogoshipo...”

## CHAPTER 68

“Bogoshipo...”

The moment you heard him said that, your heart skipped. Though you still tried to speak, “Luhan..”

“I miss you, Sooyoung. I really miss you.” Luhan whispered.

You just remained silent and let him hugged you. To be honest, you’ve craving for his hug for a long time. Now that he’s hugging you, you felt secured and safe. If only you could stop the time, you will do it.

Just then, Luhan spoke again. “You have no idea how much I wanted to do this. It seems like forever. I’ve been waiting this to happen. Now, I’ve finally got a courage to do this. Today, I will tell you what my heart is saying.”

“Luhan, what are you talking about? I think you’ve mistaken me as Qri.” you were about to break the hug but Luhan didn’t let you instead he hugged you tightly than before.

“Ani, I’m not mistaken you as Qri and I wanted to say this to you, Sooyoung and not to anyone else. Actually, Qri and I broke up.”

“Mwo?!” this time, you lightly pushed him that made you broke the hug. You narrowed your eyes to him, “Why did you broke up with her? Didn’t you know how much she loves you? She’s nice and I know that she will do everything just to make you happy, you know that Luhan? You shouldn’t have broke up with her!”

“YES, she do really love me and she will do everything just to make me happy that’s why she broke up with me.” he said as he looked at you straightly in the eyes.

“Mwo? Qri is the one who broke up with you? But why? She loves you...” you lowly said.

Luhan gently held your left hand then gazed to your eyes. You just stared back, still confused.

“Do you want to know why did she do that? It’s because she knows that I’m not happy with her. She knows that I love someone else. I love another girl.”

“Luhan...”

“I’ve been in love with that girl for such a long time but I’m not brave enough to confess. I’ve been in love with her two years

ago, could you imagine that? Two years ago when I’ve first met her. I fell in love with her that day but that day also gave me heart broken. I found out that she has already a boyfriend so I decided to love her secretly.” he paused, “I was shocked when I met her again this semester. Though I already knew her yet I kept myself on being cold towards her because I don’t want to fall in love with her again. I don’t want to feel heart broken again but my heart wouldn’t stop beating for her. Everytime I’m getting ready to be cold to her, I’m warming up everytime I’ve talk to her. I thought no one notice it but Kris knew it all along. I’ve even received many punch from him just to wake me up on being a coward. Since then, I know that my heart never stop beating for her. Since 2 years ago until now, that girl is still the one who owns my heart. The girl that makes me confuse, frustrate, and even makes me crazy. And that girl is...”

He made another paused. That moment, your eyes starting to get teary for some reason.

Luhan held your other hand using his other hand also. He’s now holding both of your hands. “That girls is the one in front of me right now. That girl is you, Sooyoung. I know I’m stupid for not doing this before but no one can stop me now no matter what. Han Sooyoung,”

You just stared at him, waiting him to continued.

“...Saranghae.” he finally said the magic word.

The moment you heard him said the magic word to you, your tears escaped from your eyes.

You couldn’t help it but burst into tears.

“Sooyoung, why are you crying? Did I say something wrong?” you could feel that he’s worried as he said that.

Slowly, you punched his chest. “Babo! You babo deer!” you continued punching his chest, “You didn’t know how much I’m suffering because of you. You have no idea how much you’re hurting me everytime I’m seeing you with Qri. Now, you suddenly appeared in front of me and tell me you love me? Are you really stupid, Luhan?!” you still continued punching him while your tears continuously falling from your eyes.

But Luhan suddenly grabbed your wrist and pulled you for another hug. “I know I’m stupid for not telling you my feelings that’s why I’m soing this now because I don’t want to be stupid anymore. Sooyoung, I want to love you. I love you, Sooyoung.”

You continued crying while he’s hugging you but you didn’t hugged him back. “Why now? It’s already too late. Now that Myungsoo and I are together again, we can’t be together anymore. We’ve missed our chance to be together, Luhan.”

“I can’t accept your reason, Sooyoung. That’s not valid. Tell me, do you love me?” -Luhan

You didn’t answer him and just continued crying on his shoulder.

Slowly, Luhan released you and stared at you but you were lowering your head to avoid his

gaze.

Then, Luhan reached your chin to makes you look at him straightly in the eyes. Your tears didn't stopped falling down to your cheeks at that time. Luhan carefully wiped it away before he asked you once again.

“Sooyoung tell me the truth, do you love me?”

You made a paused then answered him honestly, “Yes, I do. I do love you Luhan but—”

Luhan pressed a finger on your lips to stop you on talking. “Don't say anything. That's enough for my question.” then he slowly removed his finger from your lips.

“But—” you were about to speak again but he cut you off.

“Continue saying that or I'll kiss you to stop you on talking.” - Luhan

That sentence made you stopped as you swallowed hard. Luhan chuckled, “Good girl. Don't worry, I'll reserve that kiss next time.” he winked then he pulled you into a hug again.

“Don't think about Qri, Myungsoo or anyone else. For now, just think of me. Only me..” you heard him said.

You smiled, nodded and hugged him back. “I will.”

After a while, he released you from the hugged and walked back to where his luggage is and get it. He went back to you and intertwined his hand to you, “Kaja!”

You became alert and stopped

him, “Wait, where are you going?”

“There!” he pointed to your house.

You followed his point. Your eyes widen, “MWO?!”

He smiled, “Come on, I'll be staying here with you until the end of sembreak.” with that, he pulled you inside the house.

## CHAPTER 69

“Yah, Luhan!” you called him and tried to stop him but he didn't. He continued dragging you inside the house.

“Yah, Luhan. What do you think you're doing?” you whispered. “I'm just doing what my heart is telling me to do.” he replied with a smile.

You blushed as you remembered his confession.

“You're cute when you're blushing.” he commented.

You looked away, embarrassed.

Luhan chuckled, “Don't be embarrass. It's okay if you're blushing but make sure that I'm the reason why and not anyone else.”

You looked up to face him. He smiled and gently pinched your cheek, “I'm so lucky to have a girlfriend like you.”

“Mwo?! Girlfriend?!” you gasped in surprise.

He only gave you a sweet smile then he continued dragging you inside. You were about to stop him again but it's too late. Luhan already opened the main door of the house.

Right after the door opened, you found your mom went out from the kitchen as she stared at the both of you while Minwoo just got out from the bed as he also stared at you and Luhan with a confused expression.

\*Aigoo! Eotteokhae??\* you panicked as you bit your bottom lip.

“Sooyoung, who is he?” your mom asked as she pointed at Luhan. Minwoo is only waiting for your answer.

You were about to answer that question but Luhan already did.

“Annyeong haseyo! Luhan-immnida. Sooyoung's boyfriend.” he politely bowed then smiled at them.

You stared at him in disbelief. You faced your mom and your brother with an awkward smile, “Don't believe him. He's lying.”

“Then why are you both holding each other's hand? Take note, intertwined hands.” -Minwoo

You realized that he's right as you gazed down to your hand. You were trying to escape from his grip but he didn't let you instead he held it tightly than before.

You looked up at him, “Luhan..”

“I won't let you go... ever.” he said softly.



Your heart skipped as he said those words.

“Noona, is he really your boyfriend?” Minwoo asked once again.

You stared at him, he seems curious to know about the answer. You glanced to your mom, she was smiling at you. Since you already told her everything that happened to you, you weren’t surprised to her reaction anymore.

Just then, your mom answered that question for you, “He is really your noona’s boyfriend.” she said with a playful smile.

You stared at your mom in disbelief. “Omnia!”

You turned to Luhan and you could see that he was confused. But then he smiled, “I have no idea that you already told to your mom about me.” he smirked.

You bit your bottom lip and faced Minwoo, “Don’t believe them. Just believe me, he’s not my boyfriend.”

“But you love him.” your mom snapped. Your face turned to red like a tomato, “Omnia!” \*That so embarrassing!\*

She chuckled, “Aigoo! These kids! Minwoo, come on the breakfast is ready. Let’s eat and let them talk alone.”

“Eh?” -Minwoo

“Just do what I’ve said.” -your mom

“Oh.. Ne.” with that, your mom

and Minwoo left the both of at the living room as they went to the dining area.

“Aish! Omnia is really.. Aish!” you cursed in a low voice.

You heard Luhan chuckled. You glared at him, “Don’t laugh at—” your words were cut off as he suddenly hugged you.

“Yah, what are you doing?” you hissed as you tried to release from the hug.

“Don’t move. Let me hug you.” he whispered softly. You didn’t shrug anymore and just let him hug you but didn’t hug him back.

Only one of his arm was around you since his other hand was still holding your left hand.

“You have no idea how much I’m longing for this. I miss you, Sooyoung. I miss you.”

You remained silent.

“Do.. you miss me too?” you heard him asked you.

You made a pause before you answered him, “I do, I miss you Luhan.” you whispered back.

Luhan smiled at your answer. “You have no idea how happy I am right now because what you said. I’m very happy.” he paused, “Sooyoung, I love you. Do.. you love me too?”

That question made you froze. Yes, you love him but it’s complicated. How about Qri? You know she’s broken hearted because of Luhan. She’s nice to you and you couldn’t imagine that she let go Luhan just to make him happy. How about Myungsoo? He came back to

you. He patiently waits for you to forgive and accept him again. He loves you so much that he considered your decision to have his vacation with his parents. Eotteokhae?

But as for now, you wanted to follow what your heart is saying.

“Yes, Luhan. I.. do love you..” you said as you buried your face to his shoulder because of embarrassment.

Luhan smiled widely after he heard you said you love him too. “Can.. I kiss you?” he asked slowly.

That question made you lift your head from burying to his shoulder then you pushed him that caused of breaking the hug.

You glared at him, “Go back to Seoul now!” you said as you pushed him out of the house.

\*Why is he still need to ask that? Aish!\* you thought.

“Yah, I went here from China to see you then you’re telling me to go back to Seoul. No! Sirrheo! I already told you, I’m staying here.” -Luhan

“There’s no space for you stay at in this house.”

“Who told you I’m going to stay in this house?”

“Mwo?”

“I know that I don’t have any space here but I know that all the space in your heart is belong to me. So.. Can I stay there forever?” he asked as he pointed at your heart.

You blushed as you snapped his hand away, “Don’t make fun of me, Luhan! Just go back now!” you said as you pushed him again.

“Sooyoung, what are you doing? Why are you pushing him out?” your mom suddenly popped at the scene.

“Luhan is going back to Seoul now, omma.” you said as you keep pushing Luhan out of the house.

“No, I’m not leaving. I’ll be staying here for the whole sembreak, Mrs. Han.” Luhan snapped.

You gave him a look, “Stop talking, will you?!”

“If he wanted to stay, let him be.” your mom said as she approached the both of you.

You stared at her in disbelief, “What? But we have no enough space for him to stay at.” you snapped.

“I told you I can stay in your hea—” you didn’t let him finish his sentence as you covered his mouth and awkwardly smiled at your mom.

“If it is okay with you Luhan, you can sleep with Minwoo at his room.” -your mom

Luhan removed your hand from his mouth and beamed, “It’s okay with me wherever I sleep just to be near with Sooyoung.”

Again, you blushed.

“You kept blushing because of your boyfriend, Sooyoung.” your mom commented.

“Omma!” you hissed.

Luhan chuckled, “Don’t be embarrass to yourself. You’re cute when you’re blushing.”

“Shut up, Luhan! Just go back to Seoul now!”

“He said he wanted to stay here with you, you should be happy.” your mom snapped then turns to Luhan, “Come on, I’ll bring you to Minwoo’s room. I’ll tell him to help you with your things.”

Luhan happily nodded, “Ne, omma.”

“Omma?!” you raised an eyebrow.

“Is there a problem with that? You’re my girlfriend so I can call your mom a ‘omma’.” - Luhan

“That’s good to hear. I like that.” your mom giggled. “Kaja?”

Luhan nodded and with that, they both went to Minwoo’s room, leaving you dumbfounded.

\*Aish! Seriously.. This sembreak will give me sick. First, omma will give me headache because of her actions. I guess it’s wrong that I told her about Luhan. Hayy.. Then another is Luhan. Seems like I’m going to have a heart attack because he kept my heart beating faster than ever. Arggh! This is insane...\*

## CHAPTER 70

“Sooyoung, can you go to the market and buy the ingredients that I’m going to use to cook for our lunch?” you heard your mom said as she went out from Minwoo’s room.

“Ne, omma.” you replied.

“I’ll go with you.” Luhan snapped as he popped out behind your mom.

You raised an eyebrow at him. He just smiled at you in return.

\*Seriously? Is he really the Luhan I used to know? He’s weird today..\* you thought.

“Luhan, I can alone. Just stay here.” you said.

“No, I want to go with you.”

“Luhan--” your sentence was cut off by your mom.

“He wants to be with you so let him be.” -your mom

“Omma is right, noona.” You heard Minwoo shouted inside his room.

You glanced at Luhan and you saw him smiled widely. You rolled your eyes and sighed, “Do I have a choice? Aish!” then you went out from the house with a poker face.

You were about to go the nearest Bus Stop when a hand suddenly held your hand that made you stopped. You looked back and saw Luhan. “What?”

you irritated asked.

“I have my car. We can use it. Come on.” He was about to bring you to his car but you spoke to stop him.

“Sirrheo.”

“Mwo?”

“I want to commute.” You muttered.

“There’s no need for you to do that. I have a car.” He snapped.

“Don’t you hear what I’ve said? I WANT to commute.” You emphasized the word WANT to him.

You saw his expression changed. \*Did I hurt his feelings or what?\* you thought.

“Mianhe..” you heard him said as he slowly let go of your hand.

You stared at him, not saying a word.

“Did I irritate you? I’m sorry, I didn’t mean to be like this. I’m sorry, I just miss you so much that I wanted to be with you wherever you go. Mianhe, please don’t get mad at me.” – Luhan

“Luhan,” you sighed, “I’m sorry but I don’t want to depend on you. Look, we’re here at my home town and I want to do my usual thing here. Commuting is my usual thing every time I go to the market. I know you can’t understand me because you came from a well-family unlike me, I’m just an ordinary girl. Luhan please, I want to be alone. I want a time to think.”

Luhan silently sighed and lowered his head, “ohh..”

You gently took his hand that made him looked up to you once again. You could that he was shocked.

“I’ll talk to you later. Wait for me, ne?” you said.

Finally, Luhan smiled. He nodded, “I’ll always wait for you.”

You smiled and slowly released his hand but he grabbed it back to hold it.

“Are you still mad at me?” – Luhan

“No, I’m not.”

“Really?”

“If you won’t let go my hand, I’ll be mad at you.”

With that, Luhan quickly released your hand.

You chuckled, “I’m going now.”

“Okay, I’ll wait for you.”

You nodded and turned around. With that, you walked away.

As you were walking, you heard Luhan shouted.

“SARANGHAE HAN SOOYOUNG!”

Now, you could see that the people around are now staring at you. You lowered your head and slowly turned your head to see Luhan.

He smiled and waved at you, “I’ll wait for you so come back

soon.” Then he have you flying kiss and waved again.

“OHMYGOD! That girl is so lucky.” “IKR?!” “Look, her boyfriend is so cute.” “The guy is so sweet too.” “I’m jealous, I want to have a boyfriend like him.” “We can steal him. Look, the girl seems like she’s ignoring the guy.” “You’re right. We still have a chance.”

That’s what you heard from the girls around you. You glared at them but they ignored you.

\*What do they think they’re saying? Aish!\*

Before those girls approach Luhan, you made your way to Luhan’s direction and linked your arms to his. “Come on, I don’t think I can still go without you, my baby deer.” Then you tagged him along with you. You smirked as you walk passed by the girls.

“I thought you want to be alone huh?” Luhan teased with a playful smile on his face.

You looked away, “I hate that smile.”

“It’s okay. Well at least I know that you love me.” Then he laughed.

You rolled your eyes and you were to push him away from you but he pulled you closer to him. Your eyes widen. His face is now a few centimeters from you.

“Yah, what are you doing?” you asked nervously.

“Are you afraid to those girls?” –Luhan

“What?”

“Are you afraid that those girls will approach me?”

“Mwo? Are you kidding me? Psh! Of course not!” you pushed him but still, he didn’t let you go.

“Yah, let me go.” You said.

“Not until you tell me.”

“Tell you what?”

“The reason why did you dragged me along with you?”

You looked away, “Uh-oh.. umm..” \*Aigoo! I couldn’t think a reason.\*

You heard him sighed, “No reason? Okay, I’ll go back now. I’ll just wait for you.” He then released you and was about to walk away but you stopped him by grabbing his arm.

He faced you with a question look on his expression.

“Let’s go to the market together.” You lowly said while lowering your head.

You heard him grinned, “I knew you would say this. Come on, Let’s commute together.” Then he took your hand and with that, the both of you made your ways to the nearest Bus Stop.

Unknowingly, a smile formed on your face as you stared at the intertwined hands of yours and Luhan.

## CHAPTER 71

“You know how to commute?” you asked Luhan as the both of you sat side by side at the end of the bus.

“Yes.” Luhan shortly replied.

“How come?”

Luhan faced you as he raised an eyebrow, “Is it hard to believe? Why? Is it because I came from a well-family?” he sounded serious.

You refuse his eyes as you looked away and faced the window instead, “Ani. I-I was just asking.” you lowly replied.

Luhan silently sighed as he gently took your left hand using his right hand. It made you faced him again.

“Don’t worry about me. This won’t be hard for me since my parents let me be independent because they didn’t want me to depend on them. Well I guess it really helps. It won’t be hard for me to stay here with you.” he gently squeezed your hand and smiled.

That made you feel relieved. You smiled back and nodded.

Minutes later, both you and Luhan finally out from the bus. You both walked on the way to the nearest market.

Just like what Luhan said, it turned out good. You didn’t hear any cuss, protest or anything from Luhan in the whole time at the market. He actually help you a lot by buying the ingredients.

After that, you both went back

to your home.

---

“Omma, we’re back!” you called as you opened the main door.

“BABY!~” a voice said out loud as someone suddenly hugged you. “I miss you. Why didn’t you tell me you’re here already? Tsk!”

Luhan frowned as he saw a guy hugging you. Without a second, Luhan pushed the guy off of you. “What do you think you’re doing?”

The guy raised an eyebrow at Luhan then looked at you with a confused expression. You were about to explained it when Luhan spoke again.

“Who are you to just hug my GIRLFRIEND like that? And what are you doing here in my GIRLFRIEND’s house?” - Luhan

The guy chuckled but suddenly smirked as he wrapped an arm around you. He lean in to you and whispered, “Just ride on.”

Then the guy faced Luhan, “Wae? Who cares if she’s your girlfriend? She wasn’t married with you yet so I can still stole her, right baby?” he smiled sweetly at you.

You glared at him, “Oppa!” you whined. The guy only smiled.

“Oppa?!” Luhan gasped in disbelief.

“Wae? Don’t tell me, she didn’t call you ‘oppa’?” the guy said with a smirk.

You face-palmed yourself, \*Aigoo. This is crazy..\* you glared at the both of them, “Stop this, will both of you?! Aish!” you removed the guy’s arm around you and turned around as you walked towards the kitchen.

The guy was about to follow you but Luhan held him back by his arm. The guy faced him raising an eyebrow. Luhan glared at him, “Back off, she’s mine.” then he followed you first.

The guy watched Luhan’s back as a playful smirk formed on his face.

---

“Did you see Daehyun?” your mom asked as you reached the kitchen.

You sighed, “Yeah and I think he’s out of his mind right now. He’s crazy.”

Your mom gave you a confused look. You sighed once again, “He wants to play again.” you said.

Your mom chuckled, “You should use to that. That’s his hubby, remember?”

“I know but—”

“Oh Luhan!” your mom snapped as Luhan popped behind you. You looked at him and saw a poker face on him. You were about to approach him but Daehyun suddenly appeared, “Eomonim, can I help?” he asked as he winked at your mom to give a hint.

Your mom got the hint already as she replied, “Sure.” then she

smiled.

“I’ll help too.” -Luhan

You stared at him in disbelief, “You know how to cook?”

“What do you think of me? I can do many things that you didn’t know I can.” -Luhan

“Are you sure, Luhan?” -your mom

“Dae.” -Luhan

“Okay, let’s start eomonim.” - Daehyun

You rolled your eyes, “Whatever. I’ll just wait at the living room.”

“I’ll go with you then since this guy will help eomonim already.” Daehyun said as he pointed at Luhan.

“Mwo?! Andwae!! You can’t go near her! Don’t you hear what I’ve said?! She’s MY GIRLFRIEND! And also, I have a name, it’s Luhan.”

“And so what?! I don’t care!” - Daehyun

You held a hand up, “Stop both of you! Just go and help omma. I don’t want to talk to the both of you right now. I want to rest for a moment.” with that, you left.

Luhan glared at Daehyun as Daehyun just smirked at him.

“Ehem.” your mom interrupted.

They both looked at her. “Mian.” Luhan apologized. “I’m sorry eomonim. Don’t worry, I’ll help.” Daehyun said.

“I will too.” Luhan said as he walked over to your mom and started helping.

---

After preparing the food, your mom called you to come over for lunch. You did as you sat on your usual place.

Just then, both Daehyun and Luhan making a war because of the seat next to you.

“I got it first so find yours.” - Daehyun

Luhan glared at him, “So? I’m her boyfriend so I think I’m the right one to sit there.”

“I don’t care and no one cares.” Daehyun said and was about to sit but Luhan held him back by his arm, “I won’t let you sit next to my girl.”

“Who are you to order that to me?” -Daehyun

You suddenly stood up that made him stopped and stared at you. “I hate the noise. I’ll just next to mom.” with that, you walke over and sat next to your mom across your usual seat.

Your mom looked at the two, “Now, seat sideby side.”

Without a choice, both Luhan and Daehyun obeyed what your mom had said.

Silence filled the room.

“Er.. Where’s Minwoo by the way?” Daehyun broke the ice.

“He went on a date with Tia.” your mom replied.



“Woah! That kid is really grow up now.” Daehyun said chuckling.

Daehyun and your mom continued their conversation as both you and Luhan silently eat the food.

Moments later, lunch finished.

“I’m off first. I still have to fully unpacked my things.” Luhan lowly said then went off.

As Luhan disappeared, Daehyun burst into laughter as your mom giggled. You glared at them before walking out and stayed at the living room.

---

You let out a sigh as you rested your back and your head on the couch while staring at the ceiling.

\*So tiring....\*

“I like that boy..” you heard a voice said as you felt a weight sat next to you.

You turned to your side and saw Daehyun with the same position as you. You frowned, “What are you saying?”

He faced you, “That Luhan boy, I like him that Myungsoo.”

You straightened, “Can you explain it well? I don’t understand.”

He sat straight also then poked your nose, “You’re still the slow Sooyoung I know. Tss.”

You snapped his arm, “Don’t touch my nose. Psh!”

“Tss! Don’t you miss me? You didn’t even return the hug earlier. I’m mad.” then he pouted.

You rolled your eyes, “Psh! You looks like a kid when you pout. Come here, oppa.” then you hugged him.

He smiled and hugged you back, “I miss my baby.” then he ruffled your hair.

“Don’t call me that. I’m not a baby anymore.” you whined.

“Whatever. You’re still oppa’s baby.”

You chuckled, “And you’re still my naughty oppa.”

He chuckled, “I know.”

“I miss you too, oppa.” You smiled at the hug.

Just then, Luhan suddenly popped on the scene. He was frowning at you.

“Luhan..” you whispered. “Eh? He’s here?” Daehyun asked.

You tried to break the hug but Daehyun didn’t let you, “Let him see us like this. He will explode anytime because of jealous.” Daehyun whispered to you. Luhan didn’t take it anymore as he walked out.

“Oppa, let me go.”

He did with a smile. You gave him a look, “I hate you.”

“I know.” he replied with a chuckle.

You rolled your eyes, “You’re

making things worst. You should go home now. Psh.” you said.

“Sirrheo! I want to stay here.”

“Aish! Just go, will you? Palliga!” you then pushed him away.

He rolled his eyes, “Araseo. I will go but walk me out.”

“Okay. Kaja.” you stood up then walk him out.

You saw Luhan outside as you walk Daehyun out. Luhan also saw the both of you but he looked away like he’s really going to explode because of jealous.

“See? He’s jealous.” Daehyun whispered to you. You rolled your eyes, “Whatever! Just go home! Palli!” you said a little bit loud so Luhan will hear that you’re pushing him to go.

“I will. I will.” Daehyun lean in then kissed your forehead sweetly, “Bye baby. I’ll visit you again tomorrow.” he smiled at you.

He gave Luhan a smirk before walking away. You stared at his back in disbelief, \*Oppa, I’ll kill you when I see you again. Aish.\*

You turned to Luhan and he was staring back but he quickly looked away and started to walk away. You run to him and grabbed his arm to stop him. “Luhan, wait.”

He stared back at you, “What?!”

“Are you mad at me?” you asked.

“No.” he simply replied then was about to leave again but stopped when you spoke again.

“Are you jealous with Daehyun oppa?”

He faced you again with sharp eyes. You felt scared because of his stares. “Oppa? Seriously, Sooyoung. Who’s he?”

“Tell me first that you’re jealous then I’ll tell you.” you challenged.

“Mwo?! Why would I? I’m not jealous okay?” he snapped.

“Really?”

“Yes.”

“So.. I can go out with him tomorrow?” you asked.

“What?! No way! I won’t you go with him!”

“Wae? You’re jealous?”

“No, I’m not! I just don’t like that guy.”

“Don’t worry, he’s nice. Since you’re not jealous and I already told you that he’s nice, I can go with him tomorrow.” you turned around and was about to go back but you heard him exploded like a bomb.

“ARASEO! I’M MAD BECAUSE OF HIM! I’M MAD WHEN I SEE HIM HUGGING YOU AND YOU HUGGING HIM BACK! I’M MAD WHEN I SAW THAT HE KISSED YOU ON THE FOREHEAD. I’M MAD BECAUSE YOU CALLED HIM ‘OPPA’ UNLIKE ME. I’M MAD

BECAUSE I’M JEALOUS! I’M FREAKING JEALOUS, SOOYOUNG! Now, happy? I already spill it. Aish! I can’t believe I’m doing this..” he said as he turned around to walk away again.

You turned around and saw him already walking away. A playful smile formed on your lips then you said with a low tone but loud enough for him to hear that made him stopped,

“I can’t believe you’re jealous with my *cousin*.”

## CHAPTER 72

“Pardon?” you heard Luhan said as he faced you again.

You looked at him with serious expression on your face then you shook your head, “I don’t want to repeat it anymore. If you don’t hear it then sorry. I’ll go back now.” you turned around again and started walking back to the house.

“Yah, Sooyoung!” you heard him called you.

You smiled then faced with a normal expression on your face, “Ne?”

He stared at you for a moment until you realized that he was already standing right in front of you. “What is he to you again?” he asked.

“Nugu?”

“Daehyun.”

“I already told you who’s him to me and I don’t want repeat it anymore.”

“Are you going to repeat it or I’ll kiss you?” he said as he lean in to you.

You froze. You could now smell his fresh breath. He was now coming closer and closer to you. “Tell me, who’s Daehyun to you..”

“H-He’s...”

“Hmm.. I’m waiting.” he whispered as he continued coming closer to you.

“He’s just a c-cousin.” you finally spill it.

He paused. His face was only an inch away from you. He smiled, “I’m glad to hear that but you know, I wanted to continue this.”

Again, you froze. You just remained silent as he slowly coming closer to you.

All of a sudden, you closed your eyes. Wating for a soft thing to press on your lips.

1...

2...

3...

4...

5 seconds, he didn’t kiss you but he hugged you instead. You slowly opened your eyes and silently sighed in relief yet felt a

bit disappointed that he didn't do the kiss.

"You have no idea how happy I am after you clear the things about that Daehyun guy. I can't believe he's just your cousin. I even want to punch him by hugging you. Good thing, I didn't do that. You should tell this to me earlier." he said.

You hugged him back, "Mianhe. I really wanted to tell you but Daehyun kept interrupting and annoying me. He always wants to play. He's a playboy actually so he's professional by doing those things. I'm sorry Luhan.."

"Sshh. It's okay. Luckily, he's just your cousin or he already played with you."

You chuckled, "That won't happen because he's my cousin. Besides, we're close like brother and sister, you know."

Luhan smiled, "I'm now relieved."

You also smiled at the hug.

You both stayed like that for a brief moment until someone interrupted the sweet scene.

"Ehem.. Ehem.." a man cleared his throat as you heard a giggle of a girl.

Both you and Luhan broke the hug and turned to the direction of the voice. Minwoo and Tia were staring at the both of you with a smile on their faces.

"They're so sweet." Tia said.

"We're sweeter than them." Minwoo snapped then he kissed Tia on the lips that made Tia blush.

"Yah, they're staring at us." Tia shyly hissed.

Minwoo chuckled at her reaction then pinched her cheek. "You're so cute."

"Ehem." both you and Luhan cleared your throats at the same time. You both looked at each other by the sudden reaction but quickly looked away to each other.

"Come on, Tia. Let's go inside. I think there are two people that need privacy." Minwoo said then pulled Tia to go inside the house.

Silence filled the atmosphere between you and Luhan.

"Um.. Let's go inside too." you broke the ice as you started to follow to go inside but Luhan grabbed your hand that made you stopped.

You faced him, "Hmm?"

Luhan stared at you for such a long time, "Umm.."

"Yes?"

"L-Let's just go together." he intertwined his hand with you as he dragged you along with him inside the house.

"Uh-oh.."

---

It was already night. You tried to sleep but you couldn't. There's two reasons why you couldn't sleep. First, because of happiness for yourself and the other one is because of sadness for Myungsoo.

Again, you tried to sleep but then again, you couldn't. You jump off from the bed and grabbed your jacket at the bed side then left your room.

You wore your jacket as you walked out from the house. You stayed there to have a time to think on what to do. It's really hard to believe that you're cheating on Myungsoo because of Luhan.

The cold breeze of air suddenly felt of your skin. You hugged yourself as looked up. There are many stars in the sky yet you couldn't find where the most shining star is. That's weird.

Suddenly, you felt someone hugged you from behind. "What are you doing here alone? It's already late."

You turned to your side and saw Luhan's face. He was resting his chin on the top of your shoulder. "I couldn't sleep." you replied normally.

"Wae? Is there something bothering you?" he asked as he hugged you more tight than before.

You paused, "Luhan.. I'm confused."

"Confuse about what?"

"Myungsoo.." you said in a low voice.

You felt his hug loosen. It's not tight as it is like earlier. He just remains silent.

"Luhan, eotteokhae?" you asked.

“Do.. y-you still love him?”  
Luhan hesitatedly asked.

“I love you, Luhan.” you replied bluntly.

Luhan smiled, “Then that’s enough.”

You slowly removed his arm around you as you faced him, “But how can I say about this to him?” you asked.

Luhan hugged you again but now face to face. “I told you not to think about him for now remember? So let’s not talk about him.”

“But Luhan..”

“Then what do you want to do?” he interrupted.

You wrapped your arm around him to hug him back. “Luhan, can you give me time to tell about this to him? It’s really hard to break his heart.”

You heard him sigh, “I can’t say no to you so yes, I will. But please don’t make it long.” he said.

You nodded, “I will. Gomawo, Luhan.”

“You’re always welcome, Sooyoung. I love you. I may sound like a gay but I can’t imagine myself without you. You’re my life, Sooyoung so please don’t leave me.”

“Don’t worry, I won’t leave you.” you replied with a smile. “I think I can sleep now, kaja let’s go back.” you said and broke the hug.

“Then I’ll do the think that

won’t make you sleep tonight.” -  
Luhan

“Mwo—” your words were cut off by his lips. He gave you a short kiss on the lips. He smiled, “Do you think you can still sleep on what I’ve did?”

Still shocked, you nodded.

Luhan smirked, “Then, let’s make it real.” with that, Luhan lean closer to you as he gave you a real kiss.

Luhan wrapped his arms around your waist as he pulled you closer to him to deepend the kiss.

Your eyes slowly closed as you wrapped your arms around his neck and kissed him back. You could feel that Luhan smiled between the kisses the moment you kissed him back.

That night, both you and Luhan shared a kiss together with the stars above as the witness of SooHan’s first kiss. At that exact moment, the most shining star appeared in the sky as another witness of the kiss...

## CHAPTER 73

Morning came. You woke up in other arms that were wrap around your body. You slowly open your eyes and gaze up. A smile automatically formed on your lips right after you saw Luhan's face in front of you.

You gaze down and realized that

he was hugging you. You didn't make a move and just stayed still on your position. You stared at his handsome face for quite long.

\*Why are you so handsome?\* you thought.

"Quit staring at my handsome face." you suddenly heard him spoke which made you startled.

Luhan slowly open his eyes as he gaze straightly to your eyes. "Are you enjoying the view?"

You looked away, a bit embarrassed. "You're awake all along? Why didn't you wake me up?" you asked in a low voice.

Luhan chuckled.

You looked up at him and gave him a glare, "What are you laughing at?"

He smiled, "You're so cute." then he gently pinched your nose.

You slapped his hand away, "Don't touch me. I hate you!"

"I love you too." he replied bluntly.

All of a sudden, you blushed.

"You're more cute when you blush." he commented. Again, you blushed even more.

Luhan chuckled as he pulled into a warm hug. "Good morning, love."

"Love?" you asked in the hug.

Luhan nodded, "You're my love right? so I can call you 'love' from now on." he then tightened

the hug.

You smiled happily as you hugged him back.

"How did we end up here?" you suddenly asked him as you realized that you both fell asleep in the couch at the living room.

"We're watching TV here last night until you fell asleep." he answered.

"Why didn't you wake me up?"

"You hypnotized me." he replied as he narrowed his eyes to you.

"E-Eh?!"

"The way you sleep, it seems like you're hypnotizing me. I can't help it but watch you sleep and I guess I also fell asleep. Well you see, our position explains it all." he explained.

You look over the TV screen and saw it was still working. "You're right!" you whispered.

"SOOYOUNG-AH!!!!!!!!!" a sudden voice shouted then the door burst open.

"Daehyun!" you said as you stood up, totally surprised by the sudden shout.

"Sooyoung-ah~" his voice became sweet as he walked towards you and pulled you into a tight hug. "Good morning, babe." he greeted.

You took a peek at Luhan. He just smiled at you. You smiled back, \*Good thing, he understand..\* you thought.

You noticed that Daehyun also glanced at Luhan. He was

checking what will be Luhan's reaction. He was so surprised to see a unexpected reaction from him. \*He was smiling?\* he thought with a frown on his face.

"Aren't you going to steal Sooyoung from me? Are you going to just stand there without doing anything? Aren't you jealous that I'm hugging your girlfriend right now?" -Daehyun

"Why would I jealous over my girlfriend's cousin?" Luhan asked with a grin.

Slowly, Daehyun turned to face you. He was looking at you as if he's waiting for your explanation.

You smiled, "I told him about you." you lowly said.

"WHAT?!" - Daehyun

"Wae? Is there a problem with that? I'm her boyfriend so I have a right to know it." -Luhan

Daehyun rolled his eyes on him the faced you, "Why did you tell him? Aish! You ruined my plan. Tss."

"Plan? What are you planning huh?!" -Luhan

"Since you ruined my plan, you need to go with me and spend this day with me. Now, go and prepared yourself." Daehyun ordered as he pushed you to your room.

"Yah, what are you doing? She's not going anywhere with you." - Luhan

Daehyun ignored him and sat on the couch.

Luhan glared at him, "Yah, what do you think you're doing with my girlfriend?!"

"None of your business." - Daehyun

"She's MY business!" -Luhan

"Eomonim, good morning!" again, Daehyun ignored him as she saw Mrs. Han stepped out from her room. He stood up ang gave Mrs. Han a hug. "You're still sweet, Daehyun." Mrs. Han replied with a chuckle.

"Of course, i'm always sweet unlike the others." Daehyun replied as he smirked at Luhan.

Luhan gave him a death glare but Daehyun only ignored him.

"What brings you here by the way?" Mrs. Han asked.

"I'm here to fetch Sooyoung. I want to spend this day with her." -daehyun

"Oh is that so? Where is she then?" -Mrs. Han

"She's preparing herself now."

Mrs. Han nodded in understanding, "Bring her back before 8pm, araseo?"

Daehyun smiled, "Ne, araseo."

"Wait, she's not going with you." Luhan snapped the conversation.

"I thought you weren't jealous?" Daehyun playfully smiled.

"Yeah I'm not. It's just that I don't trust you." -Luhan



Mrs. Han chuckled, "Luhan, let him with his cousin just today."

"E-eh?!" Luhan asked, clueless.

"Daehyun is going to China tomorrow to continue his study there so let him spend his last day here in Korea with his favorite cousin." -Mrs. Han

That statement made Luhan paused.

"You're going to China?" you snapped when you heard their conversation as you stepped out from your room. You're still on your usual clothes.

They faced you. Daehyun sighed, "Unfortunately, yes."

You remained silent and didn't say a word. "I thought you don't want to be there?" the sadness is in your words as you said that. He may be annoys you a lot yet he still important to you and he's your favorite cousin too.

"You're right I don't want to be there." Daehyun lowly replied.

"Then why are you still going there?" you asked.

"Let's save this topic later. Look at you, you still not ready. Come on, don't waste the time." - Daehyun

You glanced at you mom. She smiled.

Then you look over to Luhan. He also smiled and nodded, assuring you that he will be okay.

You smiled at them, "Okay. Wait for me Daehyun, I'll be back." you then run to your

room.

Minutes later, you finally stepped out from your room, already dressed up.

"Ready?" Daehyun asked. You smiled and nodded.

You glanced at Luhan.

"Don't worry about him, I'm here to accompany him." your mom said. You smiled, "Dae."

"Shall we go?" -Daehyun

You smiled again and nodded. With that, both of you started walking.

"Enjoy your day." you heard Luhan whispered to you as you passed by him.

You smiled, "I will."

Luhan also smiled back.

---

Daehyun took you to a near mall in your town. This is actually your usual things whenever you're with him. To be honest, you miss this. You missed this a lot.

Both you and Daehyun explore the mall like you used to do with him before. The both of you brought the same printed shirt as a remembrance. You even went to a KTV room and sing along with Daehyun. You also played with him in the near Play House inside the mall.

After exploring the mall, you both decided to eat since you both already craving for food. Actually, it's already 3:00 in the afternoon.

"Did you enjoy what we did?" Daehyun asked while you both are eating.

He brightly nodded, "Of course!"

You smiled.

There was a long paused before you heard him spoke again, "I will surely miss this." it was only a whisper but it was also loud enough for you to hear it.

It made you stunned as you slowly looked up at him, "Can you just stay here in Korea?" you asked.

"Honestly, that's what I want but you know my parents. No one can change their minds if they already decided on it."

You silently sighed, \*He's right.\*

Daehyun is actually from a well-family because his father have a big business in China unlike your family. Honestly, you're not close with his parents. In other words, they didn't look at you or any of your family as relatives.

Daehyun was only child. He became close to your parents because he stayed at your place when he was child. His parents are busy on their business back then that's why he need to stay there. That incident gave your parents a hope to be okay with Daehyun's parents but they were wrong. After getting Daehyun back to them, they didn't contacted your parents anymore. They already cutted their connections between them and your family.

Luckily, Daehyun wasn't the same as his parents. He was totally a opposite of them that's why he's still close with your family and to you.

"Well I think that's good for you." you suddenly said.

"How can you be sure about that?" -Daehyun

"Because you're going back to study again."

"I don't want to study, we both knew that." -daehyun

"Daehyun, not all the girls are the same."

Daehyun froze. "I don't want to talk about that anymore."

"You should quit playing with the girls' hearts now. It seems like you're doing the same thing as her."

"Don't compare me to her." - Daehyun

"You still love her, don't you?"

"NO! She's not worth to love by me. Also, all girls are the same so stop saying they're not." - Daehyun

"Daehyun, do you hate me?" you asked.

"Mwo?! Of course not!"

"Then, are you saying that I'm the same as her?"

"What? Of course you're not!"

"But it already came out from your mouth. All girls are the same?"

"Except you. I already knew you so you're not counted."

You rolled your eyes, "Exactly what I want to pointed out. Try to know a girl and you'll see if she's sincere or not. Don't depend yourself from the past. Past will only hurt you the most."

"Let's change the topic." he snapped as he continued his food.

"Soon, you'll understand what I'm saying. I've learned it base on my experience. Myungsoo left me but another person came to catch me again and to give another color to my life."

"Luhan?"

You nodded.

"Well, you're just lucky to found one unlike me."

"Oh come on, Daehyun. Just open your heart again and you'll find the right girl for you too. Stop playing with their hearts, will you?"

"Sorry but I can't. That is the only thing that making me happy right now and I can't afford to let go my happiness."

You sighed, "I don't understand you Daehyun, I really don't. I hope you'll find her in China."

"Stop dreaming, cousin. It won't happen." he irritated said as he continued his food again.

You silently sighed as you stared at him, \*I wish you to be happy again but how can you do that if you won't open your heart for others?\* you sighed again, \*I can't believe you fell in love

with that kind of girl. She doesn't deserved to be love by you. I hate her for doing this to you. A guy like you deserves to be happy, Daehyun.\*

With that, you also continued your food.

## CHAPTER 74

End of semester finally came.

"Are you ready to go back to Seoul tomorrow?" Luhan asked you while the both of you are sitting side by side at the couch in the living room.

"Ahmm.. Luhan.." you called.

"Wae?"

"I'm going to Seoul with you tomorrow."

Luhan surprisingly faced you, "Mwo?"

"They will get suspicious if someone saw us together so it will better if we separated go back to Seoul. And besides, I want to see Daehyun went off with the plane tomorrow." you replied.

Luhan didn't say a word. He just remained silent and looked away.

You slowly reached out his hand and gently squeezed it that made him faced you again. "This will be better for the both of us." you said softly.

"I know but... I hope nothing will change." he lowly muttered.

You smiled, "Of course nothing will change. Don't worry.."

"Then you're still my girlfriend when we get back to Seoul?" he wanted to be sure by the tone of his voice.

You smiled widely and nodded, "I will."

Finally, Luhan smiled and hugged you. "I'm happy to hear that. I love you, Sooyoung."

You hugged him back, "Nado, I love you."

---

The next morning, you bid your goodbye to Luhan before he go back to Seoul by himself.

After Luhan left, you went to Daehyun's place. "Ready to go?" you asked him.

"I don't want to go." Daehyun pouted.

You chuckled, "Aigoo! You looks like a kid when you pout. Come on, you need to hurry up or you'll be late with your flight. Your parents must already waiting for your arrive. Kaja."

"But I want to stay here in Korea. Can I just attend your school than attending school in China?" again, he pouted.

"You can't disobey your parents. Hurry up and go."

"Psh! You're pushing me away from you now? Do you hate me now huh?"

You rolled your eyes. "Stop making excuses Daehyun oppa. Come on, you'll be late on your flight if you keep doing this."

"Araseo.. but Sooyoung," he paused.

You faced him, "Hmm?"

"You need to visit me there."

"What?!" you asked in surprised.

"I'll be sending you plane ticket in the middle of this semester so be ready. Expect a trip to China from me, my favorite cousin." after saying that, Daehyun stepped out from his house, leaving you clueless.

"Yah, Sooyoung! Are you going to just stand there for the whole day? I'll be late on my flight, come on!" Daehyun shouted outside.

That was made you back to reality again. "N-ne." you then run out from the house.

---

"What do you mean by that?" you asked Daehyun while both of you were in the middle of the way to the airport.

"By what?" he asked, confused.

"About the trip in China."

"I'll be miss my favorite cousin so I'll make a way to see you again."

"But--"

"No buts! I don't want to get bore there so whether you like it

or not, you need to accept the plane ticket that I'll be sending as a gift."

"Gift?"

"Christmas gift. Deember is nearing." he replied.

\*Christmas? Well he's right.\*

"How about omma and Minwoo? I want to spend my Christmas with them too." you excused.

"I'll be sending tickets with them too so don't worry."-Daehyun

"We're here already?" Daehyun spoke once again.

You looked around and you realized that you both already arrived in front of the airport.

Both youa nd Daehyun stepped out from the car as you walked him inside to wait for his flight.

Minutes later, Daehyun already need to went off. You both bid goodbye to each other along with a tight hug. After the mini-dramatic goodbye between the two of you, Daehyun completely left and disappeared on your sight.

---

The next day, you went back to Seoul to attend another semester of the school year. You bid your goodbye to your mom and also to yor brother, Minwoo.

You were excited yet a bit nervous as you entered the school gate.

As you were walking on the way to the dorm, you heard a familiar

voice shouted your name.

"SOOYOUNG-AH!!!"

You looked up and an automatic smile formed on your face. They're all in front of you with just some meters away from you. EXO and your 3 friends are smiling at you.

With excitement, you started running towards them but suddenly stopped as you felt someone held your hand to stop you.

You looked back and to your surprised, it was Myungsoo. He was widely smiling at you.

"Myungsoo.." you lowly said.

He lean closer to you and gave you a peck on the lips, "I miss you.." he whispered softly.

You took a glance at EXO and your friends' direction especially to Luhan. You couldn't explain his expression but there's one thing that you can be sure. He's angry. Luhan is angry.

All of a sudden, Myungsoo hugged you. "I really miss you.." he whispered once again.

You gulped as you noticed Luhan tightened his fist together. You bit your bottom lip, \*This is bad..\*

## CHAPTER 75

You focused on Luhan's direction while Myungsoo is

hugging you. You carefully shook your head as you looked at Luhan, giving him a hint to don't make a mess. But seems like Luhan wasn't focusing on you but on the hug.

Just then, Luhan started to step forward. You froze on your spot. Every step that Luhan was doing made your heart skipped for moment.

"We miss her too, you're not the only one." Luhan spoken while glaring at Myungsoo.

Myungsoo released you from the hug just when the others followed Luhan. They're now behind him.

Myungsoo smiled, "Oh yeah. You're her bestfriend. Of course I know you miss her too and so did the others."

"Bestfriend huh?" Luhan was about to raised his fist to give Myungsoo a punch but luckily, Kris immediately held him back that made him stopped.

You sighed in relief.

Luhan turned to face Kris as he raised an eyebrow.

"Don't do this. Don't make a mess. Calm down for now." Kris whispered to him.

Luhan slowly looked at you. You slowly shook your head telling him to stop.

Finally, Luhan loosen his grip. He finally calm down.

"Noona, we miss you." Sehun interrupted the scene.

You smiled, "I miss you guys

too."

"Why don't we eat all together for the last day of our sembreak?" Kris suggested.

"You're right. Kaja!" you agreed.

"Oak, let's go." Myungsoo held your hand as he said it.

Luhan narrowed his eyes to your and Myungsoo's intertwined hands. You bit your bottom lip.

Slowly, you removed your hand from Myungsoo. Myungsoo surprisingly stared at his empty hand then looked at you.

"I still have my luggage. You guys go first. I'll go bring this to my dorm first." you said.

"I'll help you." Myungsoos and Luhan said at the same time.

They looked at each other. You could feel the tension between the two. You glanced at your friends for help.

"Ah-eh.. There's no need for that boys. We're going to help her. Besides, we need to talk to her. You know, girl talk.. Right, girls?" Yuri interrupted.

"Yeah. She's right." Yoona said as she nodded along with Seohyun.

You smiled, \*Good thing, they got my hint.\*

"Don't worry about her. She has her friends. Let them talk alone.." Kris said.

You glanced at him, \*Thank you, Kris.\*

"Okay. I'll let you with your friends." -Luhan

"Gomawo.." you said.

"Okay. I'll just talk to you later then." Myungsoo said.

You nodded and smiled, "Gomawo.."

"Let's go, Sooyoung." Yuri said as she grabbed your luggage from you.

You nodded, "Ne."

With that, you along with your friends headed to the dorm leaving the boys behind.

You took one more glance at them before completely disappeared from their sights.

---

"What happened on your vacation?" Yoona asked as the 3 of you entered the dorm.

"Did something new happened?" Seohyun asked.

"Exciting?" -Yuri

You let out a sigh, "I don't know. It's confusing.." you replied.

"Wae? Is it because of Luhan?" Seohyun asked and she received glares from Yoona and Yuri. "Watch your mouth." Yoona said. "You're too noisy, Seohyun." -Yuri

"Wait.. how did you guys know about Luhan?" you asked them.

They remained silent.

"Yah, will you guys give me a

serious answer?" you said.

"Kris told me that Luhan followed you to your home town." -Yuri

"Then?" you asked.

"I told them too." she pointed to Seohyun and Yoona.

"How did you and Kris talk?" you asked confused.

Yuri's face turned red by your question. You glanced at Seohyun and Yoona. They were giggling.

You looked at Yuri again and she's blushing with a smile on her face. Your eyes widen when something crossed on your head, "Don't... tell me... you're dating Kris?!"

"N-ne.." Yuri shyly replied.

You suddenly hit her arm because of excitement. "Since when?" you excitedly asked.

"Don't ask me. I won't say anything." -Yuri

"Mwo? Waeyo?" you asked and pouted.

"I'll tell you but you need to tell us what happened between you and Luhan first." -Yuri

"I agreed to her!" -Yoona

"Nado!" Seohyun

You paused but then spoke, "Luhan confessed his love to me."

"KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA  
AAAAA!!!!!!!" your 3 friends starts to squeal.

"What's your reaction then?" - Yoona

You shyly smiled, "I was shocked of course but I eventually returned my feelings for him too."

"KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA  
AAAAA!!!!!!!" they squealed again.

"But..." you held a hand.

They stopped and stared at you, waiting for you to continue.

"We need to hide our relationship." you said.

"WHAT?!" they said in unison.

"I'm still in a relationship with Myungsoo so I need to do it. We need to do it." -you

"Oh yeah. I almost forgot that bastard!" -Yuri

"Yah, don't call him like that." - you

"Yah, don't tell me, you're still in love with him?" -Yoona

"Mwo? I'm not!" you immediately snapped.

"How about Luhan? Are you completely fall for him?" -Yuri

You were stunned by that question. Slowly you faced them, "I do."

"Woah!" they reacted.

"But I'm confused.." you said.

"EH?!"



"It seems like I'm cheating.." you said.

"Yes, you are." -Seohyun

Yuri and Yoona hit her head after she said that.

"OUCH!" Seohyun winced.

You sighed, "See, I'm a bad girl now. I'm guilty..." you lowly said.

"What are you thinking then?" - Yoona

"Molla.." -you

"You should choose between the two now. You can't continue doing this to them. You know to hurt one of them whether it's against with you." -Yuri

"I know but I'm afraid to hurt any of them." you sighed.

"But you should.." -Yoona

"Eotteokhae? Help me to decide.." -you

"Sooyoung, we can't help you. You're the only one who can help to decide for yourself. All you need to do is follow your heart. Choose the one that will make you happy and not choose the one just because of guilt. Choose wisely.." -Seohyun

Yoona's and Yuri's jaws dropped after the long advice from Seohyun.

Seohyun raised an eyebrow at them, "Don't look at me like that. I'm just stating the fact. Like the both of you, you both followed your heart right? Yoona's heart belong to Kai that's why you accepted his

heart and so did Yuri for Kris."

Again, their jaws dropped and this time, you also.

"And how about you, Seohyuh? Why don't you follow your heart?" -Yoona

Seohyun's eyes widen, "Mwo?! What are you guys saying?"

"Sehun?" that name suddenly came out from your mouth.

Seohyun eyes widen again, "MWO?! That little boy?! Yuck! Let's change the topic. I don't want to talk about that playboy."

Yoona and Yuri laughed. "I see, you're jealous over that girl!" Yuri teased.

"MWO?! NO WAY!" -Seohyun

"Are you into Sehun?" you asked.

"No, of course not!" Seohyun defended.

Again, Yuri and Yoona laughed. "In denial!" they both said in unison.

"Aish! Will you guys stop that? We're talking about Sooyoung's side not mine." -Seohyun

Now, they're staring at you.

"Why are you guys staring at me like that?" you asked.

"Who do you love the most? Luhan or Myungsoo?" -Seohyun

That question made you stunned for a long time.

"You don't have to answer that right now. You still need to

think about the answer but don't make it so long before one of them exploded." -Yuri

"Think wisely and choose wisely." -Yoona

I sighed, "I will.."

## CHAPTER 76

"Sooyoung, sit next to me." Myungsoo said as you and your 3 friends approached them (with EXO).

You took a glance at Luhan before you obeyed Myungsoo. You sat next to him, across Luhan.

"Eat this." Myungsoo placed a steak on your food.

"Gomawo." you awkwardly smiled at him.

As you glanced at Luhan, you saw him greeted you with a mad face. Right away, you texted him.

*to: Lulu*

*Calm yourself, please.. I'll break up with Myungsoo, I promise. Just give me enough time to talk to him about this later.*

*from: Sooyoung*

After Luhan read it, he finally calm down. He glanced at you. You carefully gave him a smile. At last, Luhan smiled.

You silently sighed and starts your food.

After having a lunch with your friends, EXO, and Myungsoo, Myungsoo asked you to spend this day with him. You agreed since you really need to talk to him today. As for Luhan, he understood that both you and Myungsoo need to settle things.

But you leave Luhan a text message.

*to: Lulu*

*I'll see at the roof top later. Wait me there.*

*from: Sooyoung*

After a while, he texted back.

*to: Sooyoung*

*Okay, I'll be waiting for you.*

*from: Lulu*

---

"Are you okay?" Myungsoo broke the ice while the both of you are walking around the school.

"Oh.. Ne, I'm fine." you replied as you awkwardly smiled.

"Is there something bothering you?" he asked once again.

You shook your head, "Ani."

"Are you sure? Seems like your action was against on what you're saying."

Slowly, you faced Myungsoo. "Mianhe.."

That word made Myungsoo stopped on walking and so did you.

He slowly faced you and met eyes with you, "What are you saying sorry for?" "For everything, I'm sorry." you said and didn't let a tear to escape from your eyes.

Myungsoo reach out your hand. He gently squeezed it, "Don't be sorry. As the way you say it, it feels like you'll going to leave me. You can't bear to see me hurting right? I'll be hurt if I lose you again. You're not going to hurt me, right?"

All of a sudden, your tears escaped from your eyes. You couldn't stop it anymore. Your tears automatically fell down to your cheeks.

"Sooyoung, why are you crying?" Myungsoo worriedly asked. You could feel the panic on his voice as he spoken. Instead of answering his question, you hugged him.

"Sooyoung, what's the problem? Why are you crying? Tell me.. I'm worried about you." he softly said.

"Mianhe.." that's all can you say.

"Don't be sorry. You didn't do anything bad to me so stop saying you're sorry.." he said as he hugged you back.

You shook your head while your tears continued falling from your eyes, "Ani. I need to say sorry. I will do everything for you to forgive me." you said.

Myungsoo stroke your hair, "I don't understand what you were saying but please stop crying. I

don't want to see you crying. It breaks my heart whenever I see you like this. Please stop and I'll forgive you."

Instead of stopping yourself on crying, you cried even more as you buried your face on Myungsoo's shoulder. "Mianhe.." you lowly whispered.

"Sshhhh... It's okay. Whatever it is, I will forgive you. Just don't cry please.." he hugged you tightly.

Moments later, your tears finally stopped. Myungsoo released you from the hug as he gently wiped your remaining tears on your cheeks.

"Stop crying, araseo?" he said.

You nodded, "Mianh—"

"And stop saying sorry." he interrupted.

You looked up at him. He gaze at your eyes, "I hate to hear even a single 'sorry' from you. It feels like you're letting go of me and I don't want to happen that. You won't leave, right?"

*You won't leave me, right?*

*You won't leave me, right?*

*You won't leave me, right?*

Those words echoed on your head yet you didn't gave him a response. You jist hugged him again withouth saying a word. Myungsoo just hugged you back, still not aware on what's going on.

Moments later, you broke the hug. "Can we stop roaming

around?" you asked.

"Wae? Are you tired already?"

"Yeah.. a bit. Maybe because of crying." you replied.

"Okay. Come on, I'll walk you back to your dorm." he offered.

You nodded and let him walk you on the way to the dorm.

Minutes later, both of you reached the dorm. Myungsoo bid his goodbye to you and so did you.

You were about to enter the dorm but stopped halfway as you remembered something.

---

"Aish! Where is she? Is she still coming? Or not?" Luhan mumbled to himself while waiting at the roof top.

He keeps walking back and forth but suddenly stopped, \*What if she decided to be with Myungsoo and forget about me?\*

He was about to leave and find you but you suddenly appeared in front of him. Luhan brightened as he saw you on his sight. Without any thinking, he run to you and gave you a hug.

"I thought you're not going to meet me." you heard him whispered.

"Mianhe.." that was all you can say.

"Why are you sorry?" he asked as he released you from the hug.

You didn't say a word, lowering

your head.

"What happened between you and Myungsoo? Did you already broke up with him?"

"I can't." you lowly replied.

Luhan's expression changed. "What?! Why can't you?"

"Luhan.. I can't do it right now. Can you still give me more enough time?"

Luhan stared at you for a moment.

"Luhan.... please?" -you

"Why can't you do it? Is it because you can't leave him because you still love him? Tell me, are you still confuse about your feelings towards me? Are you playing with me?" -Luhan

Those words that came out from Luhan's mouth made your expression changed. "Are you judging me? Are you judging my feelings for you?"

Luhan remained silent and looked away.

You faked a smile, "Is that so? Araseo, I think we should stop this. I can't believe you're seeing me like that. I love you, Luhan. That's what I feel for you. And for Myungsoo, he's only part of my past now. He's been good to me that's why it's really hard for me to hurt his feelings. I've experience rejection too. 2 years ago, he broke my heart that's why I know what he'll feel if I broke his heart like what he did to me before. I already chose you but you proved me that I did it wrong. I'm only asking you to give me more time to break up with him but..." a tear fell down

from your eye.

"..you don't trust me and you even judge me. It breaks my heart.." slowly, you stepped backward, turned around and started to walked away.

You've only walked 3 steps but you suddenly stopped as Luhan hugged you from behind.

Your tears continuously fall down as you felt his hug.

"Kajima..."

## CHAPTER 77

"Kajima.." you heard Luhan whispered to you.

You didn't say anything and just continued crying.

Slowly, Luhan released you from the hug for a brief moment. He turned you around to face him and eventually, he hugged you again but this time, face to face.

"Don't leave me.." you heard him whispered again.

You hugged him back, "I love you. Please believe me, Luhan.." you sobbed.

"Ssshhhhh. I believed you so please don't cry.." Luhan softly said as he stroke your hair.

"Mianhe.." -you

Luhan shook his head, "Ani.. I

should be the one to say sorry. Sooyoung, mianhe.. I'm sorry for judging you. It's just that.. I love so much that I can't live without you. I don't want to lose you so please.. don't end our relationship.."

You sobbed, "But I can't break up with Myungsoo this quick.."

"Shh.. It's okay. I understand. I'll be waiting for the right time." he said.

"But how about you? Is it okay with you?" you asked.

"It will okay for me if you promise me that you're not going to leave me." he said.

"I won't leave you, never.."

Luhan smiled at your reply.

"But Myungsoo and I—"

"Shh.. Your answer is already enough. Don't mention him again for now." he interrupted.

You nodded.

"Can we stay like this for a moment?" -Luhan

You smiled and nodded once again.

Luhan tightened his warm hug as he felt your response. You hugged him back tightly. The feeling that the both of you are having right now was hard to explain but all you know is you're happy with him. This feeling is different when you're with Myungsoo. It feels magic.

---

"What's your decision?" Luhan

asked as the both of you were sitting at the roof top.

"I'll wait for the right time to tell him about us." you replied.

Luhan took your hand. You looked up at him.

"Do you want me to go with you on the day that you're going to tell him?"

You stared at him for a moment.

"It will be better if we told him about this together." he added.

You continued staring at him but eventually, you smiled. "I think you're right."

Luhan squeeze your hand. He smiled, "Just tell me when and I'll go with you."

You smiled back, "Gomawo, Luhan."

---

It's been already 2 weeks since the night you've talk to Luhan. You both decided to be 'secret lovers' to hide it from Myungsoo. Luckily, Myungsoo didn't find out about this.

Right now, both you and Luhan were sitting side by side at the roof top. "I've finally decided." you started a conversation. Luhan turned to you.

"I think I'm ready now." -you

"Are you sure?" Luhan asked as he gently squeeze your hand.

You smiled and nodded, "I'm now ready to tell about us to Myungsoo. You're going to help me, right?"

Luhan smiled, "Of course, I will."

"After class, we'll tell him the truth." you said.

Luhan nodded, "Okay, I'll see after class then. Go now before he finds out about this for himself. He must be looking for you now."

You nodded, "Okay. Bye." you stood up and wad about to leave but Luhan pulled you back and kissed you on the lips.

"I love you." he said softly.

You smiled, "I love you too." with that, you completely leave.

---

After class, Luhan headed to your classroom. He found you was about to exit the classroom with Myungsoo.

"Sooyoung." he called.

You looked up, "Luhan.." you lowly said.

"Oh! Luhan, what's bring you here?" Myungsoo asked while he was holding your hand.

Luhan glanced at you.

You turned to Myungsoo, "We need to talk, Myungsoo." you said.

Myungsoo looked at you, confused but still followed you and Luhan at the roof top.

As the 3 of you reached the roof top, Luhan took your hand. Myungsoo narrowed his eyes on the intertwined hands.

"Why are you holding my *girlfriend's* hand?"  
Myungsoo asked in a mad tone.

"We have to tell you something." -Luhan

You held him back, "I'll do it."

Luhan nodded.

Slowly, you faced Myungsoo who was glaring at Luhan.

"Myungsoo, I want to say sorry." you started.

"No, don't be sorry. Just removed your hand from his grip and come here to me." - Myungsoo

You shook your head, "No."

"I don't want to hear what you're going to say. Come on, I'll walk you back to your dorm now." Myungsoo took your other hand and was about to drag you along with him but Luhan didn't let him as he tightened his hold on your other hand.

Myungsoo looked back and glared at him. "Let go of her hand."

"Myungsoo, please listen to me first." you spoken.

"Let's talk about this while we're walking. Kaja!" -Myungsoo

"No. Let's talk about this now. Let's talk about this here." -you

Myungsoo stared at you.

"Myungsoo.." you started but the next you wanted to say

doesn't want to come out from your mouth.

"She wants to break up with you." Luhan interrupted.

You slowly looked up at Myungsoo to see his reaction. You couldn't explain his expression. It was hard to read yet you could still feel that he was angry by the way he was holding your hand.

"Tell me, Sooyoung.. he's lying, right?" Myungsoo said in an almost pleading tone

There was a long pause as you slowly lowered your head and spoke to him, "I'm sorry but I don't love you anymore. I tried to love you again but I can't go back to the days the we used to be."

"Tell me, is it because of him?" he glanced at Luhan, "Do you love him?" he asked once more.

"I'm sorry, Myungsoo.." you lowly said but loud enough for him to hear it.

After you said those words, Myungsoo let go of your hand and heard him cursed, "SHIT!" along with his quick punch to Luhan that caused of Luhan to fall down on the floor.

"LUHAN!"

## CHAPTER 78

"LUHAN!" you shouted as you stormed to him. He was lying on

the floor as the corner if his lips is bleeding.

"Gwenchana?" you asked while trembling.

"Don't worry. I'm okay." he replied as he tried to stand up. You helped him as you held him on his arm.

To surprised you, you saw Myungsoo stormed towards Luhan to punch again but you immediately stopped him by grabbing his arm.

"Please stop. Don't hurt him. He didn't do anything. It was all my fault. Hurt me if you want but please stop hurting him.." you said as you cried.

Myungsoo loosen as he heard your words. "Wae? Sooyoung, wae?! You know I can't hurt you. I believed that it wasn't your fault. Don't blame yourself. It was all this bastard fault!" he glared at Luhan, "You bastard!" he was about to punch him again but you stopped him again by hugging him.

"Please Myungsoo.. Don't hurt him.." you sobbed.

"Do you really love him huh?" Myungsoo asked in a low tone yet angry voice.

"Yes, I do. I love Luhan." you honestly replied.

Slowly, Myungsoo put down his arm as he removed your arms from his waist. He turned around and walked away without a single word.

You watched his back as he walks away. You bet he was crying. He was hurt but you can't do anything about this



anymore. You can't love him back anymore. He's not the person in your heart anymore.

"Gwenchana?" you felt Luhan's hand held yours.

You turned to him, "I'm okay but he's not." you're referring to Myungsoo.

"I'm sorry.." you heard him said.

You shook your head, "You don't have to say sorry. I know that this will happen."

Luhan held both of your shoulders as he makes you face him. He carefully wiped your tears. He then hugged you, "Everything will be alright soon." he softly said.

You nodded, "I hope so.."

---

The next day, you decided to talk to Myungsoo again but you can't do that anymore. He's already gone. Myungsoo went back to Japan immediately.

Though Myungsoo left a letter for you. You've got it from one of your teacher.

*to: Han Sooyoung*

*I love you. That's what I feel for you but I think we're not meant for each other. Our love story doesn't have a happy ending like how the story has. I kept thinking that this is only a nightmare but it was true. You're no longer belong to me because you were belong to him. I'm sorry for breaking your heart before. I'm sorry for leaving you before without a word. Also, please tell to Luhan that I'm sorry for what I've done*

*to him. I'm sorry for saying that it was all his fault. Whether I like it or not, I know that it was all my fault. From the beginning, I'm the one who caused this. My heart break, I'm the one who caused to happen this to me. It was really my fault.*

*Again, I'm sorry for everything. Sooyoung, I still love you. It will be heart for me to forget you so I won't do that. I won't forget you but I will do my best to move on. It will take so long but I won't stop moving on. I hope you won't forget me too, Sooyoung.*

*Please forgive me for all I did to you. Sorry again and be happy.*

*PS: Don't cry after reading this.*

*from: Kim Myungsoo*

All of a sudden, a tear unknowingly escaped from your eyes.

"He said, don't cry." Luhan suddenly said who's currently sitting next to you as he was staring at Myungsoo's letter that you were holding.

You faced him, "I can't help it."

Luhan reached your face and wiped your tears, "I'm glad he easily accepted the truth." he said.

You smiled, "Yeah. I'm glad that he understands." you said.

Luhan gave you a warm hug, "I can now have you all by myself." he whispered.

You smiled, "Nado."

Luhan released you from the

hug. He gaze at you as he lean closer, "Saranghae." he whispered and gave you a sweet kiss on the lips. You smiled on the kiss as you warmly kissed him back.

\*Nado, Saranghae Luhan.\* you thought.

"OMO!"

Both you and Luhan parted as you both heard someone gasped.

"Yah, hyung! What are you doing with noona?" Sehun asked as he pointed at his hyung.

"Yah, why are you reacting like that? Did you like Sooyoung?" Seohyun suddenly appeared.

"Of course, I like Sooyoung noona." -Sehun

"Mwo?! I hate you!" Seohyun said then hit Sehun on his arm a couple of times.

"Yah, stop it! You're hurting me!" -Sehun

"I don't care!" Seohyun said as she continued hitting him.

"Yah, I said stop it!" -Sehun

"Whatever!" -Seohyun

Luhan glanced at you and smiled. You smiled back and nodded. He took your hand and immediately run with you.

Both Sehun and Seohyun weren't noticed the both of you since they were busy on their own business.

You and Luhan stopped when you both finally far away from Sehun and Seohyun.

You laughed, "hahaha. That was fun!" you said between your laughs.

Luhan laughed along, "Yeah." then suddenly, he stopped laughing as he lean closer to you. "Shall we continue our business?" he whispered.

You giggled and nodded. He was about to lean closer and closer but again, someone interrupted.

"This is our place so please find another place to continue that."

Luhan face-palmed himself. You took a glance on the person who spoke. You were surprised to see Kris and Yuri while their hands are intertwined.

Luhan glared at him, "You're wrong timing."

Kris chuckled, "You both are in a wrong place. This is OUR place." he said as he glanced at Yuri.

Yuri just smiled shyly.

Both you and Luhan rolled your eyes. Luhan took your hand once again and walked away along with you.

"Aish! I hate this!" Luhan suddenly stopped. You just chuckled at him.

"Let's just continue here then." he said as he pouted. You chuckled even more.

"Stop laughing at me." he lean closer but then again, someone interrupted.

"Luhan hyung!" -Kai

"Oh.. Sooyoung.." -Yoona

Luhan glared at them.

"What are you guys doing here at the corridor?" -Kai

"Nothing." Luhan coldly said as he pulled you to walk with him again.

You chuckled.

He narrowed his eyes to you then looked around. "There's no students around. I'm going to do it now."

Before he could go closer to you, EXO came to interrupt the scene.

"Luhan, Sooyoung!" Xiumin greeted as well as the others.

Luhan only rolled his eyes on them. "I hate you all!" he hissed.

"Woah! Woah! What's going on here?" Kris suddenly came along with Yuri, Kai, Yoona, Seohyun and Sehun.

Luhan glared at them, "You're asking me why? BECAUSE ALL OF YOU KEEPS INTERRUPTING MY MOMENT WITH MY GIRLFRIEND! Aish!"

"MWO?!" they all said in unison.

"Who's your girlfriend, hyung?" -Sehun

"Yeah, who's the unlucky girl?" Baekhyun asked with a chuckle.

"See it with your own eyes." after Luhan said that, he pulled you to him until both of your lips

met.

Your eyes widen.

All their jaws dropped except for Kris, Yuri, Yoona and Seohyun. The 4 of them are just grinning.

Luhan bit your bottom lip. His eyes were closed while yours are fully open but it went closed eventually and warmly kissed him back.

The both of you were kissing passionately in front of everyone. They're all the witness of the kiss that showing how the both of were in love with each other...

## Special Chapter: Myungsoo

### > Myungsoo's POV <

Two months had already passed since the day she broke my heart. During those two months, I'm slowly moving on though I can't lie to myself that she still has a big part in my life.

Sooyoung is the first girl that made my heart beats faster. She's the first girl who shows me the magic. She's the first girl who made me feel on how to be loved by someone except for my parents.

I love her, I still do. But slowly, I realized that I didn't owned her heart anymore. Her heart belongs to someone else now and it's none other than Luhan.

I hate that guy. All the readers, you can't blame me. I'm just saying what I'm feeling. What can I do? This is what I trully feel..

"Yah! Kim Myungsoo, stop your drama there. It doesn't fit you. Come on!"

I looked up as I heard a voice called me. I saw a girl waving at me to come over. She was my childhood friend, Park Jiyeon. I met here again in Japan as I went back after the heart break I've got.

She frowned, "Yah, we're going to be late on our flight if you continue your drama there."

I don't know why but I smiled. This girl is really annoying but she's the girl who helped me to move on. For the whole 2 months, I've to used to her attitude and I'm glad she's here with me. If wasn't because if her I think until now, I'm still down. Thanks to her.

"Yah, Kim Myungsoo! Palli!" she shouted again.

I chuckled because I saw her annoyed face. I stood up, "Araseo! I'm coming!" then I run to her.

"You're still thinking if her, aren't you?" she asked.

I shook my head, "Ani." I lied.

"Liar!" then she rolled her eyes.

I chuckled, "You already knows the answer yet you're asking me. Tss." "Whatever! Let's go! China is waiting for us." then she excitedly made her way inside the plane.

I smiled once again as I followed her. Still, this girl doesn't fail to makes me smile. I wad really thankful that she was always here for me.

---

"I'm so excited yet nervous." I heard this girl next to me exclaimed. Who else? No other than my annoying childhood friend, Jiyeon.

I rolled my eyes, "Whatever! You still have a guts to act like that huh? As if you'll find him there."

After I said that, her expression changed. Her face became serious and this isn't the Jiyeon I used to know.

"Hey, I was just joking. I'm here to help you find him." I assured her.

She faced, "You promise?"

I smiled and nodded, "I promise."

She smiled but quickly fade away.

"Wae?" I asked.

She pressed her back on her seat as he sighed, "What if he wouldn't let me talk to him? What if he doesn't want to see me again?"

I examined her for a moment. I reached her hand and gently squeeze it, "Don't think too much. For now, sleep and rest okay?"

She lightly smiled and nodded. She closed her eyes and

eventually fell asleep.

I watched her as she sleep. She's different as she was sleeping. She looks like an angel. I've couldn't imagined that this is the girl who annoys me the most. All of a sudden, I smiled unknowingly.

Soon, I followed her on dreamland.

---

"Myungsoo, wake up."

I slowly open my eyes as I felt someone shaking my body. It was Jiyeon. She's trying to wake me up.

"Uhh-hh.." I groaned.

"We're already here." I heard her said.

I looked around and realized that she was right.

We both get our luggage before we went off from the plane. We grabbed a taxi and straightly went to the near hotel. We took two rooms because we need to separate. After all, she's still a girl and I'm a guy.

"Meet me after you unpack your things. We'll go around to have fun." I said to her before she completely enter her room. "But we're going to find him right?" - Jiyeon

"We will but not today. We have to enjoy our first day here in China first." "Ohh.. You're right. Okay. Wait for me." I nodded and then she completely entered her room.

After a while, I've waited for her

outside his room as I rested my back on the wall. She went out after some minutes of waiting.

"Ready?" I asked.

She smiled and nodded. She linked her arm through my arm as she beamed excitedly and dragged me along with her out of the hotel.

I smiled at her childish act. This girl is surely annoying yet I'm happy when I'm always with her. I'm afraid to say this but I think..

I think I'm falling again...

## Special Chapter: Kai and Yoona

### CHRISTMAS DAY

"Oh... what happen with your face?" Yuri asked Yoona as she saw her sadly sitting on her bed.

Yoona slowly faced Yuri and pouted.

"Yah, what happened to you? What are you like that?" -Yuri

Yoona lowered her head, "Kai.."

"What about Kai? Aren't you guys going out to celebrate this special day together?" -Yuri

"Yeah.. that suppose to be but he didn't mention anything for his plan today." -Yoona

"Maybe he was going to surprise you." -Yuri

Yoona shook her head, "I don't think so.."

Yuri sighed, "Don't be like that. It's a Christmas day. You should be happy."

"Yeah. I want this day to be memorable but I guess it wouldn't happen anymore. Umm.. Yuri?"

"Hmm?"

"Can I join you and Kris today?"

Yuri's eyes widen, "MWO?! Andwae!"

Yoona pouted, "Aish! I thought you're my friend."

"Yes, I'm your friend but I need to spend time with Kris alone today. You know..." then Yuri giggled.

"Aish! You're making me envious. Will you just go now? You're annoying me!" -Yoona

Yuri chuckled, "Araseo. Enjoy your Christmas alone, my friend." then she run out of their room and leave the dorm to meet Kris.

Yoona let out a long sigh. "Aish! I hate you! I HATE YOU

KAI!!" she screamed as she buried her face on her pillow.

She raised her head and frowned, "If he don't want to spend this Christmas with me, I don't care. I'll just enjoy this day alone."

Yoona jumped out from her bed and went to the bathroom to take a bath. After, she dressed up nicely. She wore a pink dress with a pink shoes also along with a pink hair clip. She applied light make-up on her face before she completely leave the dorm.

She went to the park near the school. She spent her whole 7 hours exploring the park. She's not satisfy because the park was silent. There's no other people there. She's already tired but she kept on walking just to forget that she's alone this Christmas.

Until her own body went tired. She decided to sit in one of the bench at the park.

She let out a silent sigh, "I hate this day.." she mumbled to herself.

"Do you mind if I join you with this seat?" a voice suddenly said.

Yoona looked up only to see Kai leaning at her with a playful smile on his face. She was about to smile but she quickly stopped herself as she remembered that she hates this guy.

Yoona glared at him then stood up. "Use it by yourself." she answered his question.

She then walked away without turning back. She kept on walking and walking, \*He's not going to chase after me? Sheez!

I really hate him.\*

Still, she continued to walk away but suddenly stopped as all the lights on the park went off. At the time, she realized that it's already dark, it was already late. A sudden spotlight went to her and another spotlight on the right side. She saw Xiumin on that spotlight while smiling at her.

Just then, she heard a song being played. Xiumin started dancing through the song. Yoona stared at him and anticipate at how Xiumin is good at dancing.

The music suddenly stopped.

Another spotlight appeared on the left side. This time, it was Lay. He's also dancing as the music played again.

Just like Xiumin, he stopped as the music stopped.

Another spotlight appeared at the center, in front of Yoona. That time, she found herself smiling at the sight. Kai is now the one who's dancing for her.

Kai smiled at her as he step by step made his way towards his girl, still dancing.

And now, Kai is in front of her. "Merry Christmas, Miss beautiful." he greeted softly.

A tear fell from Yoona's eye all of a sudden.

"I hate you.." she said lowly.

Kai chuckled, "I love you too." then pulled her into a warm hug.

Yoona tried to push him, "Don't hug me! Go away! I hate you!"

Instead of releasing her, Kai hugged her tightly. "I'm sorry, okay. I just wanted to surprise you. Are you hungry?" he asked.

"I'm not. Just let me go." -Yoona

"No, i won't. I won't let you go, never. You're mine... only." -Kai

"Just let me go." Xiumin imitated Yoona.

"No, I won't let you go. You're mine only." Lay imitated Kai.

Both Yoona and Kai turned to their way. They saw Xiumin and Lay hugging while laughing.

"Yah! Don't interrupt our moment. Tss!" -kai

Yoona just laughed at the boys.

Kai faced her, "You're now smiling. That's good."

Yoona rolled her eyes, "Whatever! I still hate you. I don't like your surprise though.."

"Eh?! But my surprise doesn't ends yet." -Kai

Yoona stared at him blankly, totally clueless.

Kai smiled at her and took her hand. He then faced Xiumin and Lay, "Boys, show it now."

They smiled and nodded, "As you said Master Kai." then they laughed as they stepped backward. Another spotlight appeared but to Yoona's surprise, she saw a table with candle lights on it. There are two seats good for two persons.

"Can I have a dinner date with

the beautiful girl in front of me?" -Kai

Again, Yoona burst into tears.

Kai gently wiped her tears, "Don't cry. You should be happy at this occasion. So, can I have this dinner date with my girl?" - Kai

Finally, Yoona smiled and nodded. "I'm more willing, Kai."

With that, both of them made their way towards the set-up table. They sweetly ate together. They enjoyed their dinner together with love.

After the dinner, Kai stood up and offered his hand for Yoona. "May I have a dance with you?"

"Eh?! But there's no smusic."

Kai looked over Lay and Xiumin. They just nodded and played the music.

"Now, can I have this dance?" - kai

Yoona smiled and nodded. She placed her hand on Kai's hand then the both of them dance side by side.

"Gomawo, Kai. You have no idea how happy I am because of your surprises."

Kai smiled, "All for you, my girl."

"Merry Christmas." -Yoona

Kai lean closer to her as he gave her a long sweet-passionate kiss.



## Special Chapter: Kris and Yuri

### CHRISTMAS DAY

Yuri run out of the dorm. She fixed herself again before she completely made her way to their (Kris & her) meeting place.

She went to the Mall near the school for her to meet Kris there. She was very excited by the thought that she's going to spend her Christmas with the hottest guy in her eyes.

Suddenly, she heard her phone beep.

*to: Yuri*

*I'm here in front of the Mall. I'll just wait you here.*

*from: Kris*

She smiled at Kris text message and she happily texted back.

*to: Kris*

*Ne, I'm on my way now.*

*from: Yuri*

Minutes later, she finally reached the front door of the mall. A smile automatically formed on her face as she saw Kris standing near the entrance.

She was about to approach him but stopped halfway.

"Hyung!" she suddenly saw Tao appeared from nowhere.

She frowned, "What is he doing here?" she mumbled to herself.

She saw Tao gave Kris a drink. Kris smiled at him as he took the drink. Tao beamed as he accidentally shifted his gaze to Yuri's direction.

"Oh! Yuri noona!" Tao cheerfully waved at her. It made Kris looked at her direction.

Yuri faked a smile, "Ohh.. Tao, Kris.." that was the only words that came from her mouth as she approached the two.

"Yay! Now that you're here noona, we csn go inside now!" Tao beamed.

Yuri glanced at Kris and went to his side as she whispered, "What is he doing here?"

"He wants to join us." Kris simply replied.

She was about to ask him again but Tao interrupted her. "Hyung, let's go there!" then he dragged Kris away.

Yuri frowned, \*Aish! This panda is really.. Aish!\*

No choice, Yuri followed them behind. Tao and Kris entered a small botique of men's clothes. The two boys were enjoying their time checking some clothes while Yuri just followed them where ever they go.

After the botique, the 3 of them started to walk around the mall

again. Still, Yuri was just behind following the two boys.

"Are you okay?" Kris suddenly asked her.

Yuri just gave him a nod, unwillingly.

"Do you want to watch a movie?" Kris asked once again.

Yuri brightened. She was about to answer him but then again, Tao interrupted.

"That's a great idea! I want to watch a movie too." -Tao

Yuri frowned.

"Okay then. Let's all watch a movie!" Kris said.

With that, Kris bought 3 tickets good for 3 persons. After that, the 3 of them entered the cinema along with the popcorns.

In the cinema, Yuri was silent while the two were enjoying watching the movie.

She tried to talk to Kris but whenever she do that, Tao keeps getting Kris' attention.

"Kris, I'll go out first. I need to use the restroom." -Yuri

Kris only gave her a nod.

Yuri silently sighed before she stood up and made her way out of the cinema. She's not really going to use the restroom. She couldn't take to stay inside with Tao. So.. she decided to wait for the two outside the cinema.

After an hour, the movie finally ended as well as the two came out.

"Yuri!"

She looked up and saw Kris and Tao walking towards her. "Why are you here? Why didn't you go back inside?" Kris asked.

"Yeah! You've just missed the chance to watch a wonderful movie, noona." -Tao

Yuri faked a smile, "Mian. It's just that.. I'm not comfortable inside.. But well at least you guys enjoyed it."

"Still, you should let me know." -Kris

"Mianhe.. I was just hungry so yeah.." -Yuri

"Did you eat already?" -Kris

Yuri shook her head, "Ani.."

"Then, let's eat." -Kris

"Yeah! I want to eat cake right now. Come on, let's eat some cakes. I know a shop with delicious cakes here. let's but some." -Tao

"I don't like cakes." Yuri snapped.

"But I love cakes. Hyung, come on. I'm craving for cake." -Tao

Kris looked at her, "Come on. Cakes are delicious."

"If you two wants to eat cakes, then go without me. I can managed to eat alone." and with that, Yuri walked away leaving Kris and Tao behind.

Yuri kept on walking but she didn't heard any word from Kris as the time started to walks

away from him.

The fact that Kris didn't do anything made Yuri felt sad. She continued walking and walking until someone shouted her name that made her stopped.

"KWON YURI!"

Slowly, Yuri turned back. She saw Kris was just meters away from him. She noticed that he was panting.

\*So.. he run after me?\* that's what on her mind.

Just then, Kris started to make his way towards Yuri. "Where are you going?" "Away from you." Yuri replied right away.

"Why are you doing this? Look, I want to have fun." -Kris

This time, Yuri exploded. "Want to have fun?! Aren't you having fun already? Aren't you already enjoying this day like I didn't exist. I'm just here but because of that panda, it seems like I'm invisible. I just followed the both of you behind and you asked me if I'm okay. I replied you a 'yes' and I can't believe that you believe that. Of course, I'm not okay. I thought you can easily sense the feelings of the people around you but I think you're can't sense mine or are you just ignoring my feelings? Mr. Wu, tell me.. do you really like me or you're just playing with me?!"

Kris stared at her for a moment before he replied, "I don't like you.."

That statement made Yuri stepped backward. She was about to runaway and left the scene but Kris spoke again.

"I don't like you because *I love you*..." -Kris

Yuri stared at him for a brief moment and then...

*PAAAK!*

Everyone went froze. Some people around gasped after they saw Yuri slap Kris.

"Yah, why did slap me?!" -Kris

"Did.. you.. hurt?" Yuri slowly asked.

"Of course, it hurts! That was a bit hard!" -Kris

"I'm not dreaming?" -Yuri

"What?! Of course, you're not!" -Kris

Yuri smiled then hugged him.

"Yah, what's happening to you?" -Kris

"I thought I was just dreaming but you're hurt so I think I'm not. You really love me." Yuri whispered.

"Mwo?! You slap me because you thought you're just dreaming when I said I love you?" -Kris

Yuri nodded.

"Then I'll prove you that you're not dreaming and I'll show you how much I love you." Kris broke the hug and stared at Yuri's eyes.

"But I already prove it—" Yuri's words were cut off when Kris pulled her into sweet kiss.

The crowd was full of 'Aww', 'Yiieee', 'how sweet' and other reaction on how the both of them look sweet.

"Merry Christmas." Kris greeted after the kiss.

Still, Yuri was dumbfounded. This is their first kiss so she was shocked.

Kris chuckled and gently pinched her cheek, "You're cute." he then took her hand, "Let's go and eat. I know you're already hungry."

"Eh?! I don't like cakes." -Yuri

"Who told you that were going to eat cakes?" -Kris

"Then what are we going to eat?" -Yuri

"Anything you want." -Kris

"What about Tao?"

"I told him to eat cakes by himself. I told him that my girlfriend needs me." -Kris

"What did he say?"

"I didn't wait for his answer. I already run after you."

"He will get mad at you."

"I don't care. I'll just talk to him afterwards. All I know, I don't want Ms. Kwon Yuri to be mad at me. I don't know what to do if she gets mad at me. I love that girl and I won't forgive myself if I let her alone this special day. I want to spend my Christmas with her.. only her.."

Yuri smiled at his answer as she

quickly blushed. "You're talking too much."

"Why are you blushing then?" -Kris

"Mwo?! I'm n-not okay?" -Yuri

"Psh! You're not good at lying. You're red just like a tomato." -Kris

"Aish! Stop teasing me. Come on, let's just eat, okay?" -Yuri

"Araseo." Kris chuckled then pulled Yuri to walk with him, holding hands.

That day, both Yuri and Kris spent their Christmas together without any interruptions like... Tao? XD

## Special Chapter: Sehun and Seohyun

### CHRISTMAS DAY

Seohyun woke up as the sun rays hit her face through the window. She slowly open her eyes while stretching her arms upward.

She inspectedly looked around and found your neat bed inside the room. She then realized that you were out of Korea. She remembered that you went to China with Luhan.

Seohyun look over her alarm clock. Her eyes widen as he

realized that she woke up late. It was already 10:35 in the morning.

Seohyun stepped out of her room to check Yoona and Yuri on their room but there's no sight of any of the two if them inside the room.

Seohyun frowned, "They left without me? What kind of friends they are? Just because of their boyfriends, they immediately forgot about me? Psh!"

She then left the room and carefully closed it. She prepared herself before she left the dorm. Since Yuri and Yoona went out to celebrate this Christmas, she decided to go out too. She doesn't want to spend this special day at dorm anyways.

As she stepped out from the dorm and made her way towards the gate, she saw Sehun with the other members of EXO (except Kai, Kris, Xiumin, Tao, Lay and Luhan) was about to exit the gate. Seohyun immediately hide herself to hear their conversation.

"Hyung where are we going?" -Sehun

"We're going to have fun!" -Chanyeol

"We're going to enjoy this day." -Suho

"We're going to make this Christmas memorable." -Chen

"Yeah.. specially for you maknae." -D.O.

"That's right! We're going to find hot girls to full fill this cold Christmas of ours." -Baekhyun

Seohyun held her breath after she heard what Baekhyun had said, \*Find girls?! Ohmygod! I won't let Sehun do that!\*

Without any thinking, Seohyun followed them secretly.

EXO entered the bar near the school. Seohyun frowned, \*What do they think they're doing?\*

Still, she followed them inside.

Right after Seohyun entered the bar, she immediately spotted EXO with girls around them. She scanned the EXO and finally, she spotted Sehun with a girl clinging to him.

Seohyun raised an eyebrow, \*Seriously? Who do she think she is to do that?\*

She shifted her gaze to Sehun. He was smiling as if he was enjoying what the girl is doing.

\*That little boy is really annoying!\*

Now, Seohyun couldn't control herself anymore. She stormed fully inside the bar as she made her way towards Sehun and the girl with him.

"Woah! Seohyun, what are you doing here?" Baekhyun asked her but she only ignored him as she continued making her way to Sehun.

Seohyun glared at Sehun and the girl as she stopped in front of them.

Sehun looked at her as he realized that Seohyun was there in front of him. He innocently

smiled, "Seohyun noona."

"Noona your face!" Seohyun snapped as he glared at the girl, "What do you think your doing?"

The girl raised an eyebrow, "Having fun?" she answered with a questioning tone.

Seohyun removed the girl's hand around Sehun's arm and glared at her again, "Stop letting yourself to step into other business."

"What?!" -girl

Seohyun looked at Sehun, "He's not your business because he is MY business." she then smirked.

"Woah!" -EXO

Sehun's jaw dropped on what she said.

"Mwo?! Who exactly you are?" -girl

"None of your business!" - Seohyun

"Woah! You're so full of yourself huh? Wae? Are you his girlfriend?" the girl turned to Sehun, "Is she your girlfriend? I thought you don't have a girlfriend?"

"Yes, I don't have. She's not my girlfriend.." Sehun explained.

Seohyun's expression changed. The girl smirked as a victory.

"Yeah.. I'm not his girlfriend.." Seohyun lowly said as she slowly turned around and made her way out of the bar.

"..yet." it was low but loud

enough for all the people in the bar to hear it. Sehun had said it.

It made Seohyun stopped on walking. Slowly, she faced Sehun again.

Sehun was serious as he said, "She's not my girlfriend yet but I will make her mine." then he adorably smiled at Seohyun.

Seohyun was stunned but immediately back to the normal her again. She took off one of her shoes and throw it to him. It hit Sehun's arm.

"Babo.." then Seohyun completely leave the bar. She made her way out of the bar, annoyed.

"How can he do that? He still have a guts to play with me? Aish!" she mumbled to herself while walking away.

"SEOHYUN NOONA!" Sehun shouted as he run after her.

Seohyun stopped again as she faced Sehun for the second time. Without any thinking, she took off the other pair of her shoes and this time, it hits Sehun's head.

"Ow!" he winced as he dropped on the ground.

Seohyun grew worried as she immediately run towards him. "Gwenchanayo?" she asked as she stooped down in front of him.

Sehun faced her with a playful smile on his face, "Are you worried about me?"

Seohyun glared at him, "No, I'm not! I hate you! You deserve what I did to you." she was about to leave again but Sehun

stopped her by grabbing her arm that made both of them fell on the ground. Sehun was lying on the ground while Seohyun on top of him.

Sehun playfully smile,  
"Noona.." she whispered.

"Stop calling me noona. I hate it." then she got off from him and stood up and walked away again.

Sehun also stood up and chase after her once again. Luckily, he caught up.

"Let me go!" -Seohyun

"I don't want to, noona." -Sehun

"I already told you not to call me noona. It's annoying!" - Seohyun

"If you don't want me to call you noona then can I call you mine?" -Sehun

*\*PAAAAAAK!\**

"Ouch!"

Seohyun hit his head. "Stop being cheesy.. *because you're making me blush.*" she mumbled the last words.

"Again? I don't hear what you last said." -Sehun

"I said, let me go!" she lied.

"Oh really? Why are you blushing? Did I really makes you blush?" -Sehun

"You heard it?" -Seohyun

"Heard what?" Sehun innocently asked.

Seohyun rolled her eyes,  
"Whatever! I'm going!" she was about to go but then again, Sehun didn't let her.

He lifted her and makes her hope on to him. She's now riding his back. Sehun is giving her a piggy back ride.

"Yah, what are you doing? Put me down!" -Seohyun

"I can't." -Sehun

"Mwo?!"

"I can't let you walk without wearing anything on your foot." Sehun seriously said.

Seohyun stared at him for a moment, "Why are you doing this?" she lowly asked.

"Because I'm worried about you."

"Mwo?!"

"I like you, noona." he confessed.

Seohyun stunned by the sudden confession.

"And I want to spend my Christmas with you alone." - Sehun

"Why didn't you ask me on the first place?" Seohyun hesitatedly asked.

"Because I don't have a guts to ask you. I'm afraid that you will reject my offer." Seohyun chuckled, "You have no idea how much you affect me because of what you said."

Sehun remained silent.

"I like you too." Seohyun confessed. Sehun made a stopped on it.

Seohyun looked at him. His gaze was glued on the ground while he was still giving Seohyun a piggy back ride.

"Sehun?" she poked him.

Sehun suddenly turned his head to Seohyun because of what she did to him. And then..

Sehun accidentally kissed Seohyun on the lips.

Everything went froze. Their eyes were wide open because of shock. While their lips were locked with each other.

Slowly, Seohyun's eyes went closed. Sehun did the same afterwards.

"Merry Christmas." Seohyun greeted as she blushed and buried her face on his shoulder.

"Merry Christmas." Sehun greeted back as he also blushed. He smiled and started walking again.

"Where do you want to go?" - Sehun

There was a pause before Seohyun spoke, "If you're really going to ask me, there's no exact place that I want to go. I just want to stay here at your back while you were walking around the town."

Sehun smiled, "Is that so? Let's do that then."

"Are you sure? But I'm heavy." - Seohyun



"I don't care. If it is you, I will do it no matter how heavy you are." -Sehun

Seohyun smiled, "I couldn't imagine that I'm talking to the little boy Oh Sehun right now. You looks like a real man to me now."

Sehun chuckled, "I'm not a little boy anymore. I'm trully a man now and you're my lady."

Seohyun smiled and hugged his shoulder as a response.

That day, they spent their Christmas together while roaming around the town with the same position and situation.

## Special Chapter: Luhan and Sooyoung

### CHRISTMAS DAY

Both you and Luhan were walking in the side walk in China while holding each other hands, looking for Daehyun's place.

Only you and Luhan went to China. Your younger brother Minwoo refused to go because he wants to spend his Christmas with his girlfriend Tia.

Your mom on the other hand also refused to go to China with you because she doesn't want to leave Minwoo alone in their

house.

You respect their decisions so here you now, stying at China with Luhan.

How come Luhan go with you?

:: flashback ::

*You received a plane ticket from Daehyun as both you and Luhan got back from a date.*

*"What's that?" Luhan asked as he looked at the plane ticket that you were holding.*

*"Plane ticket." you simply replied.*

*Luhan rolled his eyes, "I know."*

*"You already knows but you still asking me? Psh!"*

*Again, Luhan rolled his eyes. "What I mean is what's that plane ticket for? And where that plane ticket from?"*

*"Daehyun gave this to me. He wants me to go to China to spend Christmas with him." you replied.*

*"Mwo?! No, I won't let you go there. I also want to spend Christmas with you."*

*"I know but I already promised this to him before she left Korea. I don't want break my promise. So, I need to go no matter what."*

*"Is that final?"*

*You nodded.*

*"Then I don't have a choice but to go with you there."*

*"Mwo?!"*

*"And I'll be visiting my parents there also so what a coincidence hmm.." he grinned.*

*You narrowed your eyes to him, "Coincidence eh?! Coincidence your face!"*

*Luhan chuckled, "Whether you like it or not, we're going to China and spend Christmas there together, babe."*

:: end of flashback ::

"I think were nearing." Luhan spoke, interrupting your thought.

"You've already said that many times yet we haven't seen any sight of Daehyun around." you snapped.

"Are you tired now? Let's just stop." Luhan said.

"No, we're not going to stop. Wait for me for a moment. I'm going to use the rest room first." you said.

Luhan nodded.

With that, you left him. You made your way towards the Ladies rest room. While you were walking, you suddenly bumped to someone.

"**I'm sorry.**" you bowed a couple of times.

"**No, it's o— Sooyoung?!"** the person you bump gasped.

That familiar voice made yourself to look up. "Qri?!"

You were surprised to see her again. Her hair is now short and it has a color on it.

All of a sudden, you pulled her into a hug. You really miss this girl. Even she's one of the reason why your relationship became complicated, she still a nice

friend of yours.

"I miss you, Qri." you said.

You felt that she hugged you back, "Nado."

"How are you?" you asked.

"Fine. You? How's life?" she asked back.

"Fine too."

"What are you doing here anyways?" she asked.

"Umm,. Actually, I'm with Luhan." you started.

Qri's expression changed but she tried herself to smile, "So, are you going to celebrate Christmas here together?" she asked.

"Umm.. Sort of but I'm actually here for my cousin." you replied.

"Ohh.." that was the only word that she can say.

"I wonder where that stupid located. It's hard to find him really. He didn't even make a call to me. If I found him, I'll surely hit his head. Aish! Really..

Daehyun.." -you

"Daehyun?" -Qri

You nodded, "Yeah. My

cousin's name is Daehyun."

"You mean.. you're his cousin that he was talking about?"

"Eh?! You knew Daehyun?"

"Yeah.. I guess. Jung Daehyun?"

You nodded, "Omo! I can't believe you know him. Can you help me go to his place?" you asked.

She nodded, "I'm willing to help. I'm about to go there anyways."

"Okay but wait for me. I'm going to use the bathroom first." you said. She smiled and nodded.

After using the rest room, you went back to Qri then to Luhan.

---

"Luhan, look who's here." then you showed Qri to him.

You could see how shocked Luhan was when Qri appeared from your back.

"Hello Luhan! Long time no see." Qri greeted with a smile.

Luhan smiled, "Yeah long time no see. You cutted your hair." he said.

"Ohh,. Yeah. New look, new life." she replied.

That reply made you and Luhan paused

Qri laughed, "Don't worry. I don't mean anything on what I've said. Come on, Daehyun must be waiting for the both of you now."

Luhan glanced at you as if he was asking you. "She knew Daehyun and she bring us there." you said.

Luhan nodded in understanding.

---

After a while, the 3 of you finally arrived at Daehyun's place.

Qri knocked the door for all of you. Seconds later, the door opened. Daehyun was the one who opens it.

"Qri!" he brightly greeted. His smile was really wide as he saw Qri.

You raised an eyebrow, \*Seriously? Daehyun? Aren't you notice us?\*

"Ahem." you make a moved to notice you.

"Woah! Sooyoung! You came! How come you're with Qri?" he asked.

"I saw her while we're looking for your place. To be honest, Qri is my friend back in Korea." you explained.

"Woah! Cousin, I miss you." then he gave you a hug.

"Ahem." this time, it's Luhan.

Daehyun released you from the hug, "Oh! Your boyfriend is also here."

"Of course, I'll go wherever my girl is." -Luhan

You immediately noticed Qri's changed of expression after

luhan said that. You faked a smile, "Come on, let's just go inside shall we?" you interrupted.

With that, Daehyun let the 3 of you come in.

---

Luhan was talking to Qri at this time. Yoy let them talk since they really need it.

On the other hand, you're with Daehyun. You already told Daehyun that Luhan was Qri's ex-boyfriend. At this moment, you both are not talking to each other though since Daehyun was busy watching Qri and Luhan. You couldn't explain his expression.

"What happened to you?" you suddenly asked.

He faced you with a frown on his face, "You shouldn't have bring him here."

You stared at him for a moment and then laughed, "Don't tell me, you were jealous?"

His eyes widen, "Mwo?! Of course not! Why would I?"

You chuckled, "Yeah whatever! But I think you're in love."

"What?!"

"You're in love with Qri, aren't you?"

That question made Daehyun stunned. Honestly, he doesn't know how to answer that question.

(A/N: Let's hang this scene for now. You need to read Qri's and

Daehyun's story to find out. Also, the talk of Luhan and Qri will be there too.)

---

After staying at Daehyun's place for about 5 hours, both you and Luhan decided to have fun alone together.

Both of you were walking when you suddenly saw 2 familiar figures walking to the opposite direction which is towards you.

"Sooyoung.."

It was Myungsoo with Jiyeon. \*What are they doing here?\*

"Myungsoo.." you whispered.

"Oh! Sooyoung! What are you doing here? Are you with Daehyun?" -Jiyeon

You looked at Myungsoo with a confused expression.

"Jiyeon, don't ask her about him for now. Can you leave us for a moment?" -Myungsoo to Jiyeon  
Jiyeon stared at Myungsoo for a moment then nodded. With that, she left.

"Myungsoo.."

"Can we talk?" -myungsoo

"I think I'm included to this conversation too right?" -Luhan

---

There was a silent in the air while the 3 of you were sitting in the coffee shop.

"Don't worry, I'm not going to do something bad." Myungsoo started.

"I know." -you

"I just want to say that I'm okay now. No need to be guilty. I already moved on." -Myungsoo

That statement made you smile, "That was good to hear from you. I'm happy."

Myungsoo smiled back, "Yeah. Well I think I'm happy now."

"You already found her?" -you

Myungsoo paused.

"Is she Jiyeon?" -you

Myungsoo sighed, "Hmm.. But she still loves your cousin."

You smiled, "Don't lose hope. Don't give up easily. Maybe she'll slowly fall for you."

"But Daehyun is the reason why where here." -Myungsoo

"I know but I think Daehyun have already someone else." -you

"What do you mean? Did you met him?" -Myungsoo

You nodded, "I and Luhan went ro visit him, right Luhan?"

Luhan nodded, "Yeah.. and he's with—" he didn't finish his sentence when you covered his mouth.

You awkwardly smiled at Myungsoo, "Don't mind him. So, I guess Jiyeon is waiting for yoy now." you said.

"Yeah.. You're right. So, merry christmas?" -Myungsoo

You smiled, "Merry Christmas. I hope you win her heart."

Myungsoo smiled back, "I will." then he faced Luhan, "Take a good care of her hmm?"

"Even you didn't say it, I will do it. You don't have to order me. That's my responsibility." Luhan snapped.

You elbowed him, "Don't talk like that." He just rolled his eyes.

Myungsoo chuckled, "Hmm.. Before I go, can I get Daehyun's adress?"

"Eh?! Hmm.. Yeah.. I think you guys need to meet each other now." then you gave him Daehyun's adress.

"So, I think this is a goodbye?" Myungsoo offered his hand. You smiled and took it, "Yeah.. I hope to see you already with Jiyeon when we meet again."

Myungsoo smiled for returned. He patted Luhan's shoulder, "I'm going now. Merry Christmas again." that's the last words he said then walked away.

---

"Where do you want to go?" Luhan asked you while you both are walking.

"I want to go back. I'm already tired." you said.

"Mwo?! No way! Today is Christmas and I want it to be memorable." he said.

"But I'm already tired."

"Come on, I'll give you piggy back." then he did. You're now on on his back while he was giving you a piggy back ride.

"Oh! Where are we going? This is not the way to our place." you said as Luhan took the wrong way.

"Christmas hasn't done yet. We should enjoy this special day." then suddenly, you both stopped in a garden. A garden with full of Christmas lights. There was a romantic table with candle lights at the center. There are many petals around the garden.

Luhan carefully put you down. He offered his hand to you. You smiled and took it. He led the way towards the table. He took the boquet of roses from the table as he gave it to you.

You smiled as you took it, "Beautiful.."

"You're more beautiful than the roses. You're the most beautiful in my eyes." -Luhan

"You're being cheesy nowadays, Luhan." then you chuckled.

Luhan pouted but then smiled, "I'm just stating the truth."

You smiled, "If you say so."

With that, you both eat at the romantic table that Luhan set up.

After the romantic dinner, Luhan spoke. "Wait for me. I'll just use the rest room."

You nodded and with that, he left.

While you were waiting, you suddenly heard a music played

along with a person singing. Yes, singing live. You looked around but there's no sight of any person.

Just then, you saw a spotlight appeared. To you shocked, Luhan was there and he was singing..

Yes, Luhan was one singing the song. His voice was very sweet and beautiful. He was really careful when he was singing.

You smiled at the sight. All of a sudden, tears fell from your eyes. It was tears if joy.

*I'm so lucky to have Luhan in my life.*

That's what on your thought.

Luhan approached you as she reached your hand. You smiled ad you let him hold your hand.

He led you to stood up as he started to dance you. His hands were on your waist as yours were placed on his shoulders. He was still singing while the both of you sway side by side.

As the song ended, you heard him spoke. "Merry Christmas, my girl."

You smiled, "Merry Christmas."

And with that, Luhan covered your lips with his own soft and warm lips. The both of you shared a long-sweet-passionate kiss with full of love...